



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

EducT 759.04.782

Harvard College Library



LIBRARY OF THE
Department of Education

COLLECTION OF TEXT-BOOKS
Contributed by the Publishers

TRANSFERRED
TO
HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY



3 2044 097 076 020

The Canterbury Classics

A Series of Supplementary Readers
edited under the general supervision of

KATHARINE LEE BATES

*Professor of English Literature in
Wellesley College, Wellesley, Mass.*

*The text of this edition of "Black
Beauty" agrees with that of
the standard English Edition,
as corrected by the author, and
issued by Jarrold & Sons, London.*

•

Black Beauty

The Autobiography of a Horse

By
Anna Sewell

Edited by
CHARLES W. FRENCH
*Principal of the Hyde Park High School
Chicago, Illinois*

Illustrated by
CHARLES COPELAND



Rand, McNally & Company

Chicago

New York

London

~~T 88.8220~~

Educt 759.04.782

Harvard University

Dept. of Education Library

Gift of the Publishers

May 31, 1911

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
TRANSFERRED FROM THE
LIBRARY OF THE
GRADUATE SCHOOL OF EDUCATION

APR 27 1923

Copyright, 1904,

By RAND, McNALLY & COMPANY



THE series of Canterbury Classics aims to bear its share in acquainting school children with literature suited to their years. The culture of the imagination is no less important than the culture of memory and the reasoning power. That childhood is poor which has not for friends many of the goodly company represented by Hector, Achilles, Roland, Sigurd, My Cid, Don Quixote, Lancelot, Robin Hood, Percy, the Douglas, Gulliver, Puck, Rip Van Winkle, and Alice in Wonderland. College class-rooms, where Dante and Spenser, Goethe and Coleridge are taught, speedily feel the difference between minds nourished, from babyhood up, on myths of Olympus and myths of Asgard, Hans Christian Andersen, old ballads, the "Pilgrim's Progress," the "Arabian Nights," the "Alhambra," and minds which are still strangers to fairyland and hero-land and all the dreamlands of the world's inheritance. Minds of this latter description come almost as barbarians to the study of poetry, deaf to its music and blind to its visions. They are in a foreign clime. In the larger college of life, no less, is felt the lack of an early initiation into literature. A practical people in a practical age, we need the grace of fable to balance our fact, the joy of poetry to leaven our prose. Something of the sort we are bound to have, and if familiarity in childhood with the classic tone has not armed us against the cheap, the flimsy, the corrupt in fiction, we fall easy victims to the trash of the hour. We become the sport of those mocking elves who give dry leaves for gold.

This series must needs conform somewhat, in its choice of books, to the present demands of the schools. It will furnish all good reading that is desired, but it aims also to help in arousing a desire for the more imaginative and inspiring legends

of the Aryan race. In the case of every volume issued the text of the authoritative edition will be faithfully reproduced.

These texts will be furnished with a modest amount of apparatus hidden away at the end of the book. It is the classic that is of importance. Often it may be best to disregard the notes. The series is addressed to children and aims to stimulate imagination, broaden sympathy, and awaken a love for literature. The editors strive to keep these aims in view and to avoid breaking the charm of the story by irrelevant and burdensome information. What is told is meant to be what a child would naturally like to know about the book that pleases him and the writer of the book. The biographical sketches emphasize, whenever it is appropriate, the childhood of the authors treated, and try throughout to give, by concrete illustration, impressions of personality and character. Special subjects sometimes call for special sketches, but, in general, the editorial work aims at quality rather than quantity. Knowledge which seems essential to intelligent reading, and which dictionary and teacher cannot reasonably be counted on to supply, has its place in notes, yet it is not forgotten that the notes exist for the sake of the literature, not the literature for the sake of the notes. Parents and librarians will appreciate the reading lists of books attractive to children, either by the author of the classic in hand or along the same lines of interest. Certain teachers, crowded and wearied with a variety of tasks, will welcome the section of suggestions.

We have ventured to associate this series with the memory of the sweetest and most childlike spirit in English song, hoping that little pilgrims of to-day, journeying by April ways, may find as much cheer in gentle stories as did the poet of the *Canterbury Tales*.

KATHARINE LEE BATES.

Wellesley College.



	PAGE
<i>Introduction to the Series</i>	5
<i>Dedication</i>	9
<i>Motto</i>	10

PART I.

CHAPTER		
<i>I.</i>	My Early Home	11
<i>II.</i>	The Hunt	15
<i>III.</i>	My Breaking In	20
<i>IV.</i>	Birtwick Park	26
<i>V.</i>	A Fair Start	31
<i>VI.</i>	Liberty	37
<i>VII.</i>	Ginger	39
<i>VIII.</i>	Ginger's Story Continued	45
<i>IX.</i>	Merrylegs	51
<i>X.</i>	A Talk in the Orchard	55
<i>XI.</i>	Plain Speaking	63
<i>XII.</i>	A Stormy Day	68
<i>XIII.</i>	The Devil's Trade Mark	73
<i>XIV.</i>	James Howard	78
<i>XV.</i>	The Old Ostler	83
<i>XVI.</i>	The Fire	87
<i>XVII.</i>	John Manly's Talk	93
<i>XVIII.</i>	Going for the Doctor	99
<i>XIX.</i>	Only Ignorance	104
<i>XX.</i>	Joe Green	107
<i>XXI.</i>	The Parting	112

PART II.

<i>XXII.</i>	Earlshall	116
<i>XXIII.</i>	A Strike for Liberty	122

CHAPTER	PAGE
XXIV. The Lady Anne, or a Runaway Horse	127
XXV. Reuben Smith	136
XXVI. How it Ended	141
XXVII. Ruined, and Going Down Hill	145
XXVIII. A Job Horse and His Drivers	149
XXIX. Cockneys	155
XXX. A Thief	164
XXXI. A Humbug	168

PART III.

XXXII. A Horse Fair	173
XXXIII. A London Cab Horse	179
XXXIV. An Old War Horse	185
XXXV. Jerry Barker	192
XXXVI. The Sunday Cab	201
XXXVII. The Golden Rule	207
XXXVIII. Dolly and a Real Gentleman	212
XXXIX. Seedy Sam	218
XL. Poor Ginger	223
XLI. The Butcher	227
XLII. The Election	232
XLIII. A Friend in Need	235
XLIV. Old Captain and His Successor	244
XLV. Jerry's New Year	247

PART IV.

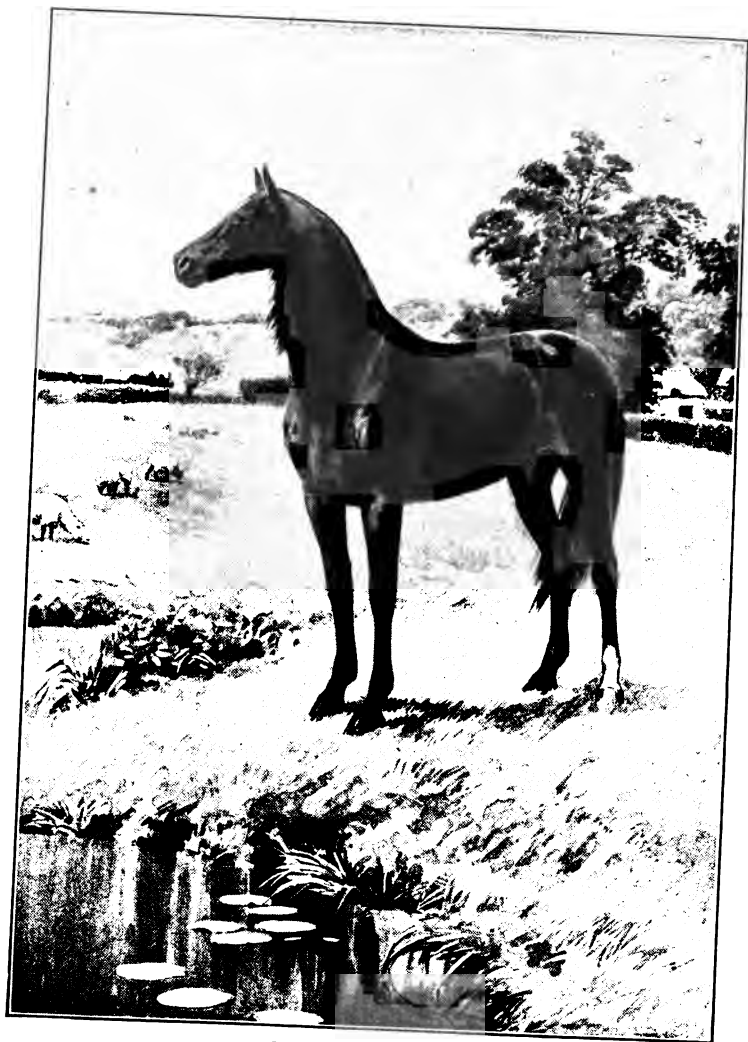
XLVI. Jakes and the Lady	255
XLVII. Hard Times	261
XLVIII. Farmer Thoroughgood and His Grandson Willie	267
XLIX. My Last Home	273
<i>A Biographical Sketch</i>	278
<i>Notes</i>	284
<i>A Reading List</i>	309
<i>Suggestions to Teachers</i>	310

*To
my dear and honored mother
whose life, no less than her pen
has been devoted to the welfare of others
this little book is
affectionately dedicated*

“**H**E was a perfect horseman, and never lost his temper with his horse, talking to and reasoning with it if it shied or bolted, as if it had been a rational being ; knowing that from the fine organization of the animal, a horse, like a child, will get confused by panic fear, which is only increased by punishment.”

—*Life of Charles Kingsley.*





BLACK BEAUTY

BLACK BEAUTY

PART I.

CHAPTER I.

MY EARLY HOME

THE first place that I can well remember, was a large pleasant meadow with a pond of clear water in it. Some shady trees leaned over it, and rushes and water-lilies grew at the deep end. Over the hedge on one side we looked into a plowed field, and on the other we looked over a gate at our master's house, which stood by the roadside; at the top of the meadow was a plantation of fir trees, and at the bottom a running brook overhung by a steep bank. 10

Whilst I was young I lived upon my mother's milk, as I could not eat grass. In the day time I ran by her side, and at night I lay down close by her. When it was hot, we used to stand by the pond in the shade of the trees, and when it was 15 cold, we had a nice warm shed near the plantation.

As soon as I was old enough to eat grass, my mother used to go out to work in the day time, and came back in the evening.

There were six young colts in the meadow 20 besides me; they were older than I was; some

were nearly as large as grown-up horses. I used to run with them, and had great fun; we used to gallop all together round and round the field, as
25 hard as we could go. Sometimes we had rather rough play, for they would frequently bite and kick as well as gallop.

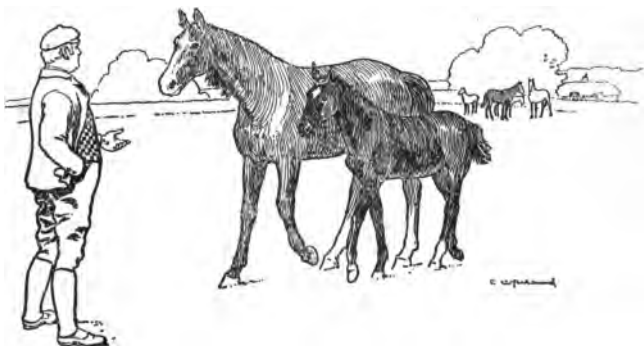
One day, when there was a good deal of kicking, my mother whinnied to me to come to her,
30 and then she said,

"I wish you to pay attention to what I am going to say to you. The colts who live here are very good colts, but they are cart-horse colts, and, of course, they have not learned manners. You
35 have been well bred and well born; your father has a great name in these parts, and your grandfather won the cup two years at the Newmarket races; your grandmother had the sweetest temper of any horse I ever knew, and I think you have
40 never seen me kick or bite. I hope you will grow up gentle and good, and never learn bad ways; do your work with a good will, lift your feet up well when you trot, and never bite or kick even in play."

45 I have never forgotten my mother's advice; I knew she was a wise old horse, and our master thought a great deal of her. Her name was Duchess, but he often called her Pet.

Our master was a good, kind man. He gave
50 us good food, good lodging, and kind words; he spoke as kindly to us as he did to his little children. We were all fond of him, and my mother

loved him very much. When she saw him at the gate, she would neigh with joy, and trot up to him. He would pat and stroke her and say, ⁵⁵ "Well, old Pet, and how is your little Darkie?"



"How is your little Darkie?"

I was a dull black, so he called me Darkie; then he would give me a piece of bread, which was very good, and sometimes he brought a carrot for my mother. All the horses would come to him, ⁶⁰ but I think we were his favorites. My mother always took him to the town on a market day in a light gig.

There was a plowboy, Dick, who sometimes came into our field to pluck blackberries from ⁶⁵ the hedge. When he had eaten all he wanted, he would have, what he called, fun with the colts, throwing stones and sticks at them to make them gallop. We did not much mind him, for we could gallop off; but sometimes a stone would ⁷⁰ hit and hurt us.

One day he was at this game, and did not know that the master was in the next field; but he was there, watching what was going on: over the hedge he jumped in a snap, and catching Dick by the arm, he gave him such a box on the ear as made him roar with the pain and surprise. As soon as we saw the master, we trotted up nearer to see what went on.

80 “Bad boy!” he said, “bad boy! to chase the colts. This is not the first time, nor the second, but it shall be the last — there — take your money and go home, I shall not want you on my farm again.” So we never saw Dick any more. Old
85 Daniel, the man who looked after the horses, was just as gentle as our master, so we were well off.



CHAPTER II.

THE HUNT

BEFORE I was two years old, a circumstance happened which I have never forgotten. It was early in the spring; there had been a little frost in the night, and a light mist still hung⁹⁰ over the plantations and meadows. I and the other colts were feeding at the lower part of the field when we heard, quite in the distance, what sounded like the cry of dogs. The oldest of the colts raised his head, pricked his ears, and said,⁹⁵ "There are the hounds!" and immediately cantered off, followed by the rest of us to the upper part of the field, where we could look over the hedge and see several fields beyond. My mother, and an old riding horse of our master's were also¹⁰⁰ standing near, and seemed to know all about it.

"They have found a hare," said my mother, "and if they come this way, we shall see the hunt."

And soon the dogs were all tearing down the¹⁰⁵ field of young wheat next to ours. I never heard such a noise as they made. They did not bark, nor howl, nor whine, but kept on a "yo! yo, o, o! yo! yo, o, o!" at the top of their voices. After them came a number of men on horseback, some¹¹⁰ of them in green coats, all galloping as fast as

they could. The old horse snorted and looked eagerly after them, and we young colts wanted to be galloping with them, but they were soon away
115 into the fields lower down; here it seemed as if they had come to a stand; the dogs left off barking, and ran about every way with their noses to the ground.

"They have lost the scent," said the old horse;
120 "perhaps the hare will get off."

"What hare?" I said.



"Leaped their horses clean over"

"Oh! I don't know *what* hare; likely enough it may be one of our own hares out of the plantation; any hare they can find will do for the dogs
125 and men to run after;" and before long the dogs began their "yo! yo, o, o!" again, and back they came altogether at full speed, making straight for our meadow at the part where the high bank and hedge overhang the brook.

130 "Now we shall see the hare," said my mother;

and just then a hare wild with fright rushed by, and made for the plantation. On came the dogs, they burst over the bank, leapt the stream, and came dashing across the field, followed by the huntsmen. Six or eight men leaped their horses clean over, close upon the dogs. The hare tried to get through the fence; it was too thick, and she turned sharp round to make for the road, but it was too late; the dogs were upon her with their wild cries; we heard one shriek, and that was the end of her. One of the huntsmen rode up and whipped off the dogs, who would soon have torn her to pieces. He held her up by the leg torn and bleeding, and all the gentlemen seemed well pleased.

145

As for me, I was so astonished that I did not at first see what was going on by the brook; but when I did look, there was a sad sight; two fine horses were down, one was struggling in the stream, and the other was groaning on the grass. One of the riders was getting out of the water covered with mud, the other lay quite still.

"His neck is broke," said my mother.

"And serve him right too," said one of the colts.

150

I thought the same, but my mother did not join with us.

"Well! no," she said, "you must not say that; but though I am an old horse, and have seen and heard a great deal, I never yet could make out why men are so fond of this sport; they often

hurt themselves, often spoil good horses, and tear up the fields, and all for a hare or a fox, or a stag, that they could get more easily some other way; but we are only horses, and don't know."

Whilst my mother was saying this, we stood and looked on. Many of the riders had gone to the young man; but my master, who had been watching what was going on, was the first to raise him. His head fell back and his arms hung down, and every one looked very serious. There was no noise now; even the dogs were quiet, and seemed to know that something was wrong. They carried him to our master's house. I heard afterwards that it was young George Gordon, the squire's only son, a fine, tall young man, and the pride of his family.

There was now riding off in all directions to the doctor's, to the farrier's, and no doubt to Squire Gordon's, to let him know about his son. When Mr. Bond, the farrier, came to look at the black horse that lay groaning on the grass, he felt him all over, and shook his head; one of his legs was broken. Then some one ran to our master's house and came back with a gun; presently there was a loud bang and a dreadful shriek, and then all was still; the black horse moved no more.

My mother seemed much troubled; she said she had known that horse for years, and that his name was "Rob Roy"; he was a good bold horse, and there was no vice in him. She never would go to that part of the field afterwards.

Not many days after, we heard the church bell tolling for a long time; and looking over the gate we saw a long strange black coach that was covered with black cloth and was drawn by black horses; after that came another and another and another, and all were black, while the bell kept tolling, tolling. They were carrying young Gordon to the churchyard to bury him. He would never ride again. What they did with Rob Roy I never knew; but 'twas all for one little hare.



CHAPTER III.

MY BREAKING IN

I WAS now beginning to grow handsome; my coat had grown fine and soft, and was bright
205 black. I had one white foot, and a pretty white star on my forehead. I was thought very handsome; my master would not sell me till I was four years old; he said lads ought not to work like men, and colts ought not to work like
210 horses till they were quite grown up.

When I was four years old, Squire Gordon came to look at me. He examined my eyes, my mouth, and my legs; he felt them all down; and then I had to walk and trot and gallop before
215 him; he seemed to like me, and said, "When he has been well broken in, he will do very well." My master said he would break me in himself, as he should not like me to be frightened or hurt, and he lost no time about it, for the next day he
220 began.

Every one may not know what breaking in is, therefore I will describe it. It means to teach a horse to wear a saddle and bridle and to carry on his back a man, woman, or child; to go just the
225 way they wish, and to go quietly. Besides this, he has to learn to wear a collar, a crupper, and a breeching, and to stand still whilst they are put

on; then to have a cart or a chaise fixed behind him, so that he cannot walk or trot without dragging it after him: and he must go fast or slow,²⁸⁰ just as his driver wishes. He must never start at what he sees, nor speak to other horses, nor bite, nor kick, nor have any will of his own; but always do his master's will, even though he may be very tired or hungry; but the worst of all is,²⁸⁵ when his harness is once on, he may neither jump for joy nor lie down for weariness. So you see this breaking in is a great thing.



"I had long been used to a halter"

I had of course long been used to a halter and a headstall, and to be led about in the field and lanes quietly, but now I was to have a bit and a²⁹⁰ bridle; my master gave me some oats as usual, and after a good deal of coaxing, he got the bit into my mouth, and the bridle fixed, but it was a nasty thing! Those who have never had a bit²⁹⁵

in their mouths cannot think how bad it feels; a great piece of cold hard steel as thick as a man's finger to be pushed into one's mouth, between one's teeth and over one's tongue, with the ends
250 coming out at the corner of your mouth, and held fast there by straps over your head, under your throat, round your nose, and under your chin; so that no way in the world can you get rid of the nasty hard thing; it is very bad! yes, very bad!
255 at least I thought so; but I knew my mother always wore one when she went out, and all horses did when they were grown up; and so, what with the nice oats, and what with my master's pats, kind words, and gentle ways, I got to
260 wear my bit and bridle.

Next came the saddle, but that was not half so bad; my master put it on my back very gently, whilst old Daniel held my head; he then made the girths fast under my body, patting and talking
265 to me all the time; then I had a few oats, then a little leading about, and this he did every day till I began to look for the oats and the saddle. At length, one morning my master got on my back and rode me round the meadow on the soft grass.
270 It certainly did feel queer; but I must say I felt rather proud to carry my master, and as he continued to ride me a little every day, I soon became accustomed to it.

The next unpleasant business was putting on
275 the iron shoes; that too was very hard at first. My master went with me to the smith's forge, to see

that I was not hurt or got any fright. The blacksmith took my feet in his hand one after the other, and cut away some of the hoof. It did not pain me, so I stood still on three legs till he had done²⁸⁰ them all. Then he took a piece of iron the shape of my foot, and clapped it on, and drove some nails through the shoe quite into my hoof, so that the shoe was firmly on. My feet felt very stiff and heavy, but in time I got used to it.²⁸⁵

And now having got so far, my master went on to break me to harness; there were more new things to wear. First, a stiff heavy collar just on my neck, and a bridle with great side-pieces against my eyes called blinkers, and blinkers²⁹⁰ indeed they were, for I could not see on either side, but only straight in front of me; next there was a small saddle with a nasty stiff strap that went right under my tail; that was the crupper. I hated the crupper—to have my long tail doubled²⁹⁵ up and poked through that strap was almost as bad as the bit. I never felt more like kicking, but of course I could not kick such a good master, and so in time I got used to everything, and could do my work as well as my mother.³⁰⁰

I must not forget to mention one part of my training, which I have always considered a very great advantage. My master sent me for a fortnight to a neighboring farmer's, who had a meadow which was skirted on one side by the³⁰⁵ railway. Here were some sheep and cows, and I was turned in amongst them.

I shall never forget the first train that ran by. I was feeding quietly near the pales which
310 separated the meadow from the railway, when I heard a strange sound at a distance, and before I knew whence it came — with a rush and a clatter, and a puffing out of smoke — a long black train of something flew by, and was gone almost before I
315 could draw my breath. I turned, and galloped to the further side of the meadow as fast as I could go, and there I stood snorting with astonishment and fear. In the course of the day many other trains went by, some more slowly; these drew up
320 at the station close by, and sometimes made an awful shriek and groan before they stopped. I thought it very dreadful, but the cows went on eating very quietly, and hardly raised their heads as the black frightful thing came puffing and
325 grinding past.

For the first few days I could not feed in peace; but as I found that this terrible creature never came into the field, or did me any harm, I began to disregard it, and very soon I cared as little
330 about the passing of a train as the cows and sheep did.

Since then I have seen many horses much alarmed and restive at the sight or sound of a steam engine; but thanks to my good master's
335 care, I am as fearless at railway stations as in my own stable.

Now if any one wants to break in a young horse well, that is the way.

My master often drove me in double harness with my mother, because she was steady, and ³⁴⁰ could teach me how to go better than a strange horse. She told me the better I behaved, the better I should be treated, and that it was wisest always to do my best to please my master; "but," said she, "there are a great many kinds of men; ³⁴⁵ there are good, thoughtful men like our master, that any horse may be proud to serve; but there are bad, cruel men, who never ought to have a horse or dog to call their own. Beside, there are a great many foolish men, vain, ignorant, and ³⁵⁰ careless, who never trouble themselves to think; these spoil more horses than all, just for want of sense; they don't mean it, but they do it for all that. I hope you will fall into good hands, but a horse never knows who may buy him, or who ³⁵⁵ may drive him; it is all a chance for us, but still I say, do your best wherever it is, and keep up your good name."



CHAPTER IV.

BIRTWICK PARK

AT this time I used to stand in the stable, and my coat was brushed every day till it shone like a rook's wing. It was early in May, when there came a man from Squire Gordon's, who took me away to the Hall. My master said, "Good-by, Darkie; be a good horse, and always
365 do your best." I could not say "good-by," so I put my nose into his hand; he patted me kindly, and I left my first home. As I lived some years with Squire Gordon, I may as well tell something about the place.

370 Squire Gordon's Park skirted the village of Birtwick. It was entered by a large iron gate, at which stood the first lodge, and then you trotted along on a smooth road between clumps of large old trees; then another lodge and another gate,
375 which brought you to the house and the gardens. Beyond this lay the home paddock, the old orchard, and the stables. There was accommodation for many horses and carriages; but I need only describe the stable into which I was taken;
380 this was very roomy, with four good stalls; a large swinging window opened into the yard, which made it pleasant and airy.

The first stall was a large square one, shut in

behind with a wooden gate; the others were common stalls, good stalls, but not nearly so large; it had a low rack for hay and a low manger for corn; it was called a loose box, because the horse that was put into it was not tied up, but left loose, to do as he liked. It is a great thing to have a loose box.

390



"My name is Merrylegs"

Into this fine box the groom put me; it was clean, sweet, and airy. I never was in a better box than that, and the sides were not so high but that I could see all that went on through the iron rails that were at the top.

395

He gave me some very nice oats, he patted me, spoke kindly, and then went away.

When I had eaten my corn, I looked round. In the stall next to mine, stood a little fat gray

400 pony, with a thick mane and tail, a very pretty head, and a pert little nose.

I put my head up to the iron rails at the top of my box, and said, "How do you do? what is your name?"

405 He turned round as far as his halter would allow, held up his head, and said, "My name is Merrylegs: I am very handsome, I carry the young ladies on my back, and sometimes I take our mistress out in the low chair. They think a
410 great deal of me, and so does James. Are you going to live next door to me in the box?"

I said "Yes."

"Well then," he said, "I hope you are good-tempered; I do not like any one next door who
415 bites."

Just then a horse's head looked over from the stall beyond; the ears were laid back, and the eye looked rather ill-tempered. This was a tall chestnut mare, with a long handsome neck; she looked
420 across to me and said,

"So it is you who have turned me out of my box; it is a very strange thing for a colt like you, to come and turn a lady out of her own home."

"I beg your pardon," I said, "I have turned
425 no one out; the man who brought me put me here, and I had nothing to do with it; and as to my being a colt, I am turned four years old, and am a grown-up horse: I never had words yet with horse or mare, and it is my wish to live at peace."

430 "Well," she said, "we shall see; of course I

do not want to have words with a young thing like you." I said no more.

In the afternoon when she went out, Merrylegs told me all about it.

"The thing is this," said Merrylegs, "Ginger ⁴⁸⁵ has a bad habit of biting and snapping; that is why they call her Ginger, and when she was in the loose box, she used to snap very much. One day she bit James in the arm and made it bleed, and so Miss Flora and Miss Jessie, who are very ⁴⁹⁰ fond of me, were afraid to come into the stable. They used to bring me nice things to eat, an apple or a carrot, or a piece of bread, but after Ginger stood in that box, they dare not come, and I missed them very much. I hope they will ⁴⁹⁵ now come again, if you do not bite or snap."

I told him I never bit anything but grass, hay, and corn, and could not think what pleasure Ginger found it.

"Well, I don't think she does find pleasure," ⁴⁵⁰ says Merrylegs; "it is just a bad habit; she says no one was ever kind to her, and why should she not bite? Of course it is a very bad habit; but I am sure, if all she says be true, she must have been very ill-used before she came here. John ⁴⁵⁵ does all he can to please her, and James does all he can, and our master never uses a whip if a horse acts right; so I think she might be good-tempered here; you see," he said with a wise look, "I am twelve years old; I know a great ⁴⁶⁰ deal, and I can tell you there is not a better place

for a horse all round the country than this. John is the best groom that ever was, he has been here fourteen years; and you never saw such a kind
465 boy as James is, so that it is all Ginger's own fault that she did not stay in that box."



CHAPTER V.

A FAIR START

THE name of the coachman was John Manly; he had a wife and one little child, and they lived in the coachman's cottage, very near the stables. The next morning he took me into the yard and gave me a good grooming, and just as I was going into my box with my coat soft and bright, the Squire came in to look at me, and seemed pleased. "John," he said, "I meant to have tried the new horse this morning, but I have other business. You may as well take him a round after breakfast; go by the common and the Highwood, and back by the water-mill and the river; that will show his paces."

"I will, sir," said John. After breakfast he came and fitted me with a bridle. He was very particular in letting out and taking in the straps, to fit my head comfortably; then he brought the saddle, that was not broad enough for my back; he saw it in a minute and went for another, which fitted nicely. He rode me first slowly, then a trot, then a canter, and when we were on the common he gave me a light touch with his whip, and we had a splendid gallop.

"Ho ho! my boy," he said, as he pulled me up, "you would like to follow the hounds, I think."

As we came back through the Park we met the Squire and Mrs. Gordon walking; they stopped, and John jumped off.

498 "Well, John, how does he go?"

"First-rate, sir," answered John, "he is as fleet as a deer, and has a fine spirit too; but the lightest touch of the rein will guide him. Down at the end of the common we met one of those
500 traveling carts hung all over with baskets, rugs, and such like; you know, sir, many horses will not pass those carts quietly; he just took a good look at it, and then went on as quiet and pleasant as could be. They were shooting rabbits near
505 the Highwood, and a gun went off close by; he pulled up a little and looked, but did not stir a step to right or left. I just held the rein steady and did not hurry him, and it's my opinion he has not been frightened or ill-used while he was
510 young."

"That's well," said the Squire, "I will try him myself to-morrow."

The next day I was brought up for my master. I remembered my mother's counsel and my good
515 old master's, and I tried to do exactly what he wanted me to do. I found he was a very good rider, and thoughtful for his horse too. When we came home, the lady was at the hall door as he rode up.

520 "Well, my dear," she said, "how do you like him?"

"He is exactly what John said," he replied;

"a pleasanter creature I never wish to mount. What shall we call him?"

"Would you like Ebony?" said she, "he is as ⁵³⁵ black as ebony."

"No, not Ebony."

"Will you call him Blackbird, like your uncle's old horse?"

"No, he is far handsomer than old Blackbird ⁵⁴⁰ ever was."

"Yes," she said, "he is really quite a beauty, and he has such a sweet, good-tempered face and such a fine intelligent eye—what do you say to calling him Black Beauty?" ⁵⁴⁵

"Black Beauty—why, yes, I think that is a very good name. If you like, it shall be his name," and so it was.

When John went into the stable, he told James that master and mistress had chosen a good ⁵⁵⁰ sensible English name for me, that meant something, not like Marengo, or Pegasus, or Abdallah. They both laughed, and James said, "If it was not for bringing back the past, I should have named him Rob Roy, for I never saw two horses more ⁵⁴⁵ alike."

"That's no wonder," said John, "didn't you know that farmer Grey's old Duchess was the mother of them both?"

I had never heard that before, and so poor ⁵⁵⁰ Rob Roy who was killed at that hunt was my brother! I did not wonder that my mother was so troubled. It seems that horses have no

relations; at least, they never know each other
555 after they are sold.

John seemed very proud of me: he used to make my mane and tail almost as smooth as a lady's hair, and he would talk to me a great deal; of course I did not understand all he said, but I
560 learned more and more to know what he *meant*, and what he wanted me to do. I grew very fond of him, he was so gentle and kind, he seemed to know just how a horse feels, and when he cleaned me, he knew the tender places, and the ticklish
565 places; when he brushed my head, he went as carefully over my eyes as if they were his own, and never stirred up any ill-temper.

James Howard, the stable boy, was just as gentle and pleasant in his way, so I thought
570 myself well off. There was another man who helped in the yard, but he had very little to do with Ginger and me.

A few days after this I had to go out with Ginger in the carriage. I wondered how we
575 should get on together; but except laying her ears back when I was led up to her, she behaved very well. She did her work honestly, and did her full share, and I never wish to have a better partner in double harness. When we came to a
580 hill, instead of slackening her pace, she would throw her weight right into the collar, and pull away straight up. We had both the same sort of courage at our work, and John had oftener to hold us in, than to urge us forward; he never

had to use the whip with either of us; then our⁵⁸⁵ paces were much the same, and I found it very easy to keep step with her when trotting, which made it pleasant, and master always liked it when we kept step well, and so did John. After we had been out two or three times together we⁵⁹⁰ grew quite friendly and sociable, which made me feel very much at home.



"Justice" and "Sir Oliver"

As for Merrylegs, he and I soon became great friends; he was such a cheerful, plucky, good-tempered little fellow, that he was a favorite⁵⁹⁵ with every one, and especially with Miss Jessie and Flora, who used to ride him about in the orchard, and have fine games with him and their little dog Frisky.

Our master had two other horses that stood in⁶⁰⁰ another stable. One was Justice, a roan cob, used for riding, or for the luggage cart; the other was

an old brown hunter, named Sir Oliver; he was past work now, but was a great favorite with the master, who gave him the run of the park; he sometimes did a little light carting on the estate, or carried one of the young ladies when they rode out with their father; for he was very gentle, and could be trusted with a child as well as Merry-legs. The cob was a strong, well-made, good-tempered horse, and we sometimes had a little chat in the paddock, but of course I could not be so intimate with him as with Ginger, who stood in the same stable.



CHAPTER VI.

LIBERTY

I WAS quite happy in my new place, and if⁶¹⁵ there was one thing that I missed, it must not be thought I was discontented; all who had to do with me were good, and I had a light airy stable and the best of food. What more could I want? Why, liberty! For three years⁶²⁰ and a half of my life I had had all the liberty I could wish for; but now, week after week, month after month, and no doubt year after year, I must stand up in a stable night and day except when I am wanted, and then I must be just as steady⁶²⁵ and quiet as any old horse who has worked twenty years. Straps here and straps there, a bit in my mouth, and blinkers over my eyes. Now, I am not complaining, for I know it must be so. I only mean to say that for a young horse full of⁶³⁰ strength and spirits who has been used to some large field or plain, where he can fling up his head, and toss up his tail and gallop away at full speed, then round and back again with a snort to his companions—I say it is hard never to have a⁶³⁵ bit more liberty to do as you like. Sometimes, when I have had less exercise than usual, I have felt so full of life and spring, that when John has taken me out to exercise, I really could not keep quiet; do what I would, it seemed as if I must⁶⁴⁰ jump, or dance, or prance, and many a good shake

I know I must have given him, specially at the first; but he was always good and patient.

"Steady, steady, my boy," he would say; "wait
645 a bit, and we'll have a good swing, and soon get the tickle out of your feet." Then as soon as we were out of the village, he would give me a few miles at a spanking trot, and then bring me back as fresh as before, only clear of the fidgets, as he
650 called them. Spirited horses, when not enough exercised, are often called skittish, when it is only play; and some grooms will punish them, but our John did not; he knew it was only high spirits. Still, he had his own ways of making me
655 understand by the tone of his voice or the touch of the rein. If he was very serious and quite determined, I always knew it by his voice, and that had more power with me than anything else, for I was very fond of him.

660 I ought to say, that sometimes we had our liberty for a few hours; this used to be on fine Sundays in the summer-time. The carriage never went out on Sundays, because the church was not far off.

665 It was a great treat to us to be turned out into the Home Paddock or the old orchard. The grass was so cool and soft to our feet; the air so sweet, and the freedom to do as we liked was so pleasant; to gallop, to lie down, and roll over on
670 our backs, or to nibble the sweet grass. Then it was a very good time for talking, as we stood together under the shade of the large chestnut tree.

CHAPTER VII.

GINGER

ONE day when Ginger and I were standing alone in the shade we had a great deal of talk; she wanted to know all about my bringing up and breaking in, and I told her. 675

"Well," said she, "if I had had your bringing up I might have been as good a temper as you are, but now I don't believe I ever shall."

"Why not?" I said. 680

"Because it has been all so different with me," she replied; "I never had any one, horse or man, that was kind to me, or that I cared to please, for in the first place I was taken from my mother as soon as I was weaned, and put with a lot of other young colts: none of them cared for me, and I cared for none of them. There was no kind master like yours to look after me, and talk to me, and bring me nice things to eat. The man that had the care of us never gave me a kind word in my life. 685 I do not mean that he ill-used me, but he did not care for us one bit further than to see that we had plenty to eat and shelter in the winter. A foot-path ran through our field, and very often the great boys passing through, would fling stones to 690 make us gallop. I was never hit, but one fine young colt was badly cut in the face, and I should

think it would be a scar for life. We did not care for them, but of course it made us more wild, and
700 we settled it in our minds that boys were our enemies. We had very good fun in the free meadows, galloping up and down and chasing each other round and round the field; then standing still under the shade of the trees. But when it
705 came to breaking in, that was a bad time for me. Several men came to catch me, and when at last



"Dragged me along by the halter"

they closed me in at one corner of the field, one caught me by the forelock, another caught me by the nose, and held it so tight I could hardly draw
710 my breath; then another took my under jaw in his hard hand and wrenched my mouth open, and so by force they got on the halter and the bar into my mouth; then one dragged me along by the halter, another flogging behind, and this was the
715 first experience I had of men's kindness; it was all force. They did not give me a chance to know what they wanted. I was high bred and had a

great deal of spirit, and was very wild, no doubt, and gave them I daresay plenty of trouble, but then it was dreadful to be shut up in a stall day ⁷²⁰ after day instead of having my liberty, and I fretted and pined and wanted to get loose. You know yourself, it's bad enough when you have a kind master and plenty of coaxing, but there was nothing of that sort for me. ⁷²⁵

"There was one—the old master, Mr. Ryder, who I think could soon have brought me round, and could have done anything with me, but he had given up all the hard part of the trade to his son and to another experienced man, and he only ⁷³⁰ came at times to oversee. His son was a strong, tall, bold man; they called him Samson, and he used to boast that he had never found a horse that could throw him. There was no gentleness in him as there was in his father, but only hard- ⁷³⁵ ness, a hard voice, a hard eye, a hard hand, and I felt from the first that what he wanted was to wear all the spirit out of me, and just make me into a quiet, humble, obedient piece of horse-flesh. 'Horse-flesh!' Yes, that is all that he thought ⁷⁴⁰ about," and Ginger stamped her foot as if the very thought of him made her angry. And she went on: "If I did not do exactly what he wanted, he would get put out, and make me run round with that long rein in the training field till he had ⁷⁴⁵ tired me out. I think he drank a good deal, and I am quite sure that the oftener he drank the worse it was for me. One day he had worked

me hard in every way he could, and when I laid
750 down I was tired and miserable, and angry; it all
seemed so hard. The next morning he came for
me early, and ran me round again for a long time.
I had scarcely had an hour's rest, when he came
again for me with a saddle and bridle and a new
755 kind of bit. I could never quite tell how it came
about; he had only just mounted me on the train-
ing ground, when something I did put him out of
temper, and he chucked me hard with the rein.
The new bit was very painful, and I reared up
760 suddenly, which angered him still more, and he
began to flog me. I felt my whole spirit set
against him, and I began to kick, and plunge, and
rear as I had never done before, and we had a
regular fight: for a long time he stuck to the
765 saddle and punished me cruelly with his whip and
spurs, but my blood was thoroughly up, and I cared
for nothing he could do if only I could get him
off. At last, after a terrible struggle, I threw him
off backwards. I heard him fall heavily on the
770 turf, and without looking behind me, I galloped
off to the other end of the field; there I turned
round and saw my persecutor slowly rising from
the ground and going into the stable. I stood
under an oak tree and watched, but no one came
775 to catch me. The time went on, the sun was
very hot, the flies swarmed round me, and settled
on my bleeding flanks where the spurs had dug
in. I felt hungry, for I had not eaten since the
early morning, but there was not enough grass in

that meadow for a goose to live on. I wanted to 780
lie down and rest, but with the saddle strapped
tightly on, there was no comfort, and there was
not a drop of water to drink. The afternoon
wore on, and the sun got low. I saw the other
colts led in, and I knew they were having a good 785
feed.

“At last, just as the sun went down, I saw the
old master come out with a sieve in his hand. He
was a very fine old gentleman with quite white
hair, but his voice was what I should know him 790
by amongst a thousand. It was not high, nor yet
low, but full, and clear, and kind, and when he
gave orders it was so steady and decided, that
everyone knew, both horses and men, that he
expected to be obeyed. He came quietly along, 795
now and then shaking the oats about that he had
in the sieve, and speaking cheerfully and gently
to me, ‘Come along, lassie, come along, lassie;
come along, come along.’ I stood still and let him
come up; he held the oats to me and I began to eat 800
without fear; his voice took all my fear away.
He stood by, patting and stroking me whilst I
was eating, and seeing the clots of blood on my
side he seemed very vexed; ‘Poor lassie! it was a
bad business, a bad business!’ then he quietly 805
took the rein and led me to the stable. Just at
the door stood Samson. I laid my ears back and
snapped at him. ‘Stand back,’ said the master,
‘and keep out of her way; you’ve done a bad day’s
work for this filly.’ He growled out something 810

about a vicious brute. 'Hark ye,' said the father, 'a bad-tempered man will never make a good-tempered horse. You've not learned your trade yet, Samson.' Then he led me into my box, took
815 off the saddle and bridle with his own hands and tied me up; then he called for a pail of warm water and a sponge, took off his coat, and while the stable man held the pail, he sponged my sides a good while so tenderly that I was sure he knew
820 how sore and bruised they were. 'Whoa! my pretty one,' he said, 'stand still, stand still.' His very voice did me good, and the bathing was very comfortable. The skin was so broken at the corners of my mouth that I could not eat the hay,
825 the stalks hurt me. He looked closely at it, shook his head, and told the man to fetch a good bran mash and put some meal into it. How good that mash was! and so soft and healing to my mouth. He stood by all the time I was eating,
830 stroking me and talking to the man. 'If a high-mettled creature like this,' said he, 'can't be broken in by fair means, she will never be good for anything.'

"After that he often came to see me, and
835 when my mouth was healed, the other breaker, Job, they called him, went on training me. He was steady and thoughtful, and I soon learned what he wanted."

CHAPTER VIII.

GINGER'S STORY CONTINUED

THE next time that Ginger and I were together in the paddock, she told me about her first place. 840

"After my breaking in," she said, "I was bought by a dealer to match another chestnut horse. For some weeks he drove us together, and then we were sold to a fashionable gentleman, and were sent up to London. I had been driven with a bearing rein by the dealer, and I hated it worse than anything else; but in this place we were reined far tighter; the coachman and his master thinking we looked more stylish 845 so. We were often driven about in the Park and other fashionable places. You who never had a bearing rein on, don't know what it is, but I can tell you it is dreadful.

"I like to toss my head about, and hold it as high as any horse; but fancy now yourself, if you tossed your head up high and were obliged to hold it there, and that for hours together, not able to move it at all, except with a jerk still higher, your neck aching till you did not know 850 how to bear it. Beside that, to have two bits instead of one; and mine was a sharp one, it hurt my tongue and my jaw, and the blood from my

tongue colored the froth that kept flying from
865 my lips, as I chafed and fretted at the bits and
rein; it was worst when we had to stand by the
hour waiting for our mistress at some grand party
or entertainment; and if I fretted or stamped
with impatience, the whip was laid on. It was
870 enough to drive one mad."

"Did not your master take any thought for
you?" I said.

"No," said she, "he only cared to have a stylish
turn-out, as they call it; I think he knew very
875 little about horses, he left that to his coachman,
who told him I was an irritable temper; that I
had not been well broken to the bearing rein, but
I should soon get used to it; but *he* was not the
man to do it, for when I was in the stable, miser-
880 able and angry, instead of being soothed and
quieted by kindness, I got only a surly word or a
blow. If he had been civil, I would have tried to
bear it. I was willing to work, and ready to work
hard too; but to be tormented for nothing but
885 their fancies angered me. What right had they
to make me suffer like that? Besides the sore-
ness in my mouth and the pain in my neck, it
always made my windpipe feel bad, and if I had
stopped there long, I know it would have spoiled
890 my breathing; but I grew more and more rest-
less and irritable, I could not help it; and I began
to snap and kick when any one came to harness
me; for this the groom beat me, and one day, as
they had just buckled us into the carriage, and

were straining my head up with that rein, I began ⁸⁹⁵ to plunge and kick with all my might. I soon broke a lot of harness, and kicked myself clear; so that was an end of that place.

"After this, I was sent to Tattersall's to be sold; of course I could not be warranted free from vice, ⁹⁰⁰ so nothing was said about that. My handsome appearance and good paces soon brought a gentleman to bid for me, and I was bought by another



"My handsome appearance and good paces"

dealer; he tried me in all kinds of ways and with different bits, and soon found out what I could ⁹⁰⁵ bear. At last he drove me quite without a bearing rein, and then sold me as a perfectly quiet horse to a gentleman in the country. He was a good master, and I was getting on very well, but his old groom left him and a new one came. This ⁹¹⁰ man was as hard-tempered and hard-handed as

Samson; he always spoke in a rough, impatient voice, and if I did not move in the stall the moment he wanted me, he would hit me above
915 the hocks with his stable broom or the fork, whichever he might have in his hand. Every thing he did was rough, and I began to hate him; he wanted to make me afraid of him, but I was too high-mettled for that; and one day when he
920 had aggravated me more than usual, I bit him, which of course put him in a great rage, and he began to hit me about the head with a riding whip. After that, he never dared to come into my stall again; either my heels or my teeth were
925 ready for him, and he knew it. I was quite quiet with my master, but of course he listened to what the man said, and so I was sold again.

"The same dealer heard of me, and said he thought he knew one place where I should do
930 well. 'Twas a pity,' he said, 'that such a fine horse should go to the bad, for want of a real good chance,' and the end of it was that I came here not long before you did; but I had then made up my mind, that men were my natural
935 enemies, and that I must defend myself. Of course it is very different here, but who knows how long it will last? I wish I could think about things as you do; but I can't after all I have gone through."

940 "Well," I said, "I think it would be a real shame if you were to bite or kick John or James."

"I don't mean to," she said, "while they are good to me. I did bite James once pretty sharp, but John said, 'Try her with kindness,' and in-⁹⁴⁵stead of punishing me as I expected, James came to me with his arm bound up, and brought me a bran mash and stroked me; and I have never snapped at him since, and I won't either."

I was sorry for Ginger, but of course I knew ⁹⁵⁰very little then, and I thought most likely she made the worst of it; however, I found that as the weeks went on, she grew much more gentle and cheerful, and had lost the watchful, defiant look that she used to turn on any strange person ⁹⁵⁵who came near her; and one day James said, "I do believe that mare is getting fond of me, she quite whinnied after me this morning when I had been rubbing her forehead."

"Aye, aye, Jim, 'tis the Birtwick balls," said ⁹⁶⁰John, "she'll be as good as Black Beauty by-and-by; kindness is all the physic she wants, poor thing!" Master noticed the change too, and one day when he got out of the carriage and came to speak to us as he often did, he stroked her beau-⁹⁶⁵tiful neck, "Well, my pretty one, well, how do things go with you now? You are a good bit happier than when you came to us, I think."

She put her nose up to him in a friendly, trust-ful way, while he rubbed it gently. ⁹⁷⁰

"We shall make a cure of her, John," he said.

"Yes, sir, she's wonderfully improved, she's not

the same creature that she was; it's the Birtwick
975 balls, sir," said John, laughing.

This was a little joke of John's; he used to say that a regular course of the Birtwick horse-balls would cure almost any vicious horse; these balls, he said, were made up of patience and gentleness, 980 firmness and petting, one pound of each to be mixed up with half-a-pint of common-sense, and given to the horse every day.



CHAPTER IX.

MERRYLEGS

MR. BLOMEFIELD, the Vicar, had a large family of boys and girls; sometimes they used to come and play with Miss Jessie and Flora. One of the girls was as old as Miss Jessie; two of the boys were older, and there were several little ones. When they came, there was plenty of work for Merrylegs, for nothing pleased them so much as getting on him by turns and riding him all about the orchard and the home paddock, and this they would do by the hour together.

One afternoon he had been out with them a long time, and when James brought him in and put on his halter, he said,

"There, you rogue, mind how you behave yourself, or we shall get into trouble."

"What have you been doing, Merrylegs?" I asked.

1000

"Oh!" said he, tossing his little head, "I have only been giving those young people a lesson. They did not know when they had had enough, nor when I had had enough, so I just pitched them off backwards; that was the only thing they could understand."

"What?" said I, "you threw the children off?"

I thought you did know better than that! Did you throw Miss Jessie or Miss Flora?"

1010 He looked very much offended, and said:—

"Of course not; I would not do such a thing for the best oats that ever came into the stable. Why, I am as careful of our young ladies as the master could be, and as for the little ones, it is I
1015 who teach them to ride. When they seem frightened or a little unsteady on my back, I go as smooth and as quiet as old pussy when she is after a bird; and when they are all right, I go on again faster, you see, just to use them to it; so
1020 don't you trouble yourself preaching to me; I am the best friend, and the best riding master those children have. It is not them, it is the boys. Boys," said he, shaking his mane, "are quite different; they must be broken in, as we were
1025 broken in when we were colts, and just be taught what's what. The other children had ridden me about for nearly two hours, and then the boys thought it was their turn, and so it was, and I was quite agreeable. They rode me by turns,
1030 and I galloped them about up and down the fields and all about the orchard for a good hour. They had each cut a great hazel stick for a riding whip, and laid it on a little too hard; but I took it in good part, till at last I thought we had had
1035 enough, so I stopped two or three times by way of a hint. Boys, you see, think a horse or pony is like a steam engine or a thrashing machine, and can go on as long and as fast as they please. They

never think that a pony can get tired, or have any feelings; so as the one who was whipping¹⁰⁴⁰ me could not understand, I just rose up on my hind legs and let him slip off behind—that was all. He mounted me again, and I did the same. Then the other boy got up, and as soon as he began to use his stick I laid him on the grass,¹⁰⁴⁵ and so on, till they were able to understand that was all. They are not bad boys; they don't wish to be cruel. I like them very well; but you see I had to give them a lesson. When they brought me to James and told him, I think he was very¹⁰⁵⁰ angry to see such big sticks. He said they were only fit for drovers or gipsies, and not for young gentlemen."

"If I had been you," said Ginger, "I would have given those boys a good kick, and that¹⁰⁵⁵ would have given them a lesson."

"No doubt you would," said Merrylegs, "but then I am not quite such a fool (begging your pardon) as to anger our master or make James ashamed of me; besides, those children are under¹⁰⁶⁰ my charge when they are riding; I tell you they are entrusted to me. Why, only the other day I heard our master say to Mrs. Blomefield, 'My dear madam, you need not be anxious about the children; my old Merrylegs will take as much care of¹⁰⁶⁵ them as you or I could. I assure you I would not sell that pony for any money, he is so perfectly good-tempered and trustworthy.' And do you think I am such an ungrateful brute as to forget

all the kind treatment I have had here for five years, and all the trust they place in me, and turn vicious because a couple of ignorant boys used me badly? No! no! you never had a good place where they were kind to you; and so you don't know, and I'm sorry for you, but I can tell you good places make good horses. I wouldn't vex our people for anything; I love them, I do," said Merrylegs, and he gave a low "ho, ho, ho," through his nose, as he used to do in the morning when he heard James's footstep at the door.

"Besides," he went on, "if I took to kicking, where should I be? Why, sold off in a jiffy, and no character, and I might find myself slaved about under a butcher's boy, or worked to death at some seaside place where no one cared for me, except to find out how fast I could go, or be flogged along in some cart with three or four great men in it going out for a Sunday spree, as I have often seen in the place I lived in before I came here. No," said he, shaking his head, "I hope I shall never come to that."



CHAPTER X.

A TALK IN THE ORCHARD

GINGER and I were not of the regular tall carriage horse breed, we had more of the racing blood in us. We stood about fifteen and a half hands high ; we were therefore ¹⁰⁸⁵ just as good for riding as we were for driving, and our master used to say that he disliked either horse or man that could do but one thing ; and



"The master on Ginger, the mistress on me"

as he did not want to show off in London parks, he preferred a more active and useful kind of ¹¹⁰⁰ horse. As for us, our greatest pleasure was when we were saddled for a riding party ; the master on Ginger, the mistress on me, and the young ladies on Sir Oliver and Merrylegs. It was so cheerful to be trotting and cantering all ¹¹⁰⁵ together, that it always put us in high spirits.

I had the best of it, for I always carried the mistress; her weight was little, her voice was sweet, and her hand was so light on the rein, that
1110 I was guided almost without feeling it.

Oh! if people knew what a comfort to horses a light hand is, and how it keeps a good mouth and a good temper, they surely would not chuck, and drag, and pull at the rein as they often do.
1115 Our mouths are so tender, that where they have not been spoiled or hardened with bad or ignorant treatment, they feel the slightest movement of the driver's hand, and we know in an instant what is required of us. My mouth had never been
1120 spoiled, and I believe that was why the mistress preferred me to Ginger, although her paces were certainly quite as good. She used often to envy me, and said it was all the fault of breaking in, and the gag bit in London, that her mouth was
1125 not so perfect as mine; and then old Sir Oliver would say, "There, there! don't vex yourself; you have the greatest honor; a mare that can carry a tall man of our master's weight, with all your spring and sprightly action, does not need to hold
1130 her head down because she does not carry the lady. We horses must take things as they come, and always be contented and willing so long as we are kindly used."

I had often wondered how it was, that Sir
1135 Oliver had such a very short tail; it really was only six or seven inches long, with a tassel of hair hanging from it; and on one of our holidays

in the orchard I ventured to ask him by what accident it was that he had lost his tail. "Accident!" he snorted with a fierce look, "it was no 1140 accident! it was a cruel, shameful, cold-blooded act! When I was young I was taken to a place where these cruel things were done; I was tied up, and made fast so that I could not stir, and then they came and cut off my long beautiful tail, 1145 through the flesh, and through the bone, and took it away."

"How dreadful!" I exclaimed.

"Dreadful! ah! it was dreadful; but it was not only the pain, though that was terrible and lasted 1150 a long time; it was not only the indignity of having my best ornament taken from me, though that was bad; but it was this, how could I ever brush the flies off my sides and my hind legs any more? You who have tails just whisk the flies 1155 off without thinking about it, and you can't tell what a torment it is to have them settle upon you and sting and sting, and have nothing in the world to lash them off with. I tell you it is a life-long wrong, and a life-long loss; but thank 1160 Heaven! they don't do it now."

"What did they do it for then?" said Ginger.

"For fashion!" said the old horse with a stamp of his foot; "for fashion! if you know what that means. There was not a well-bred young horse in 1165 my time that had not his tail docked in that shameful way, just as if the good God that made us did not know what we wanted and what looked best."

"I suppose it is fashion that makes them strap
1170 our heads up with those horrid bits that I was
tortured with in London," said Ginger.

"Of course it is," said he; "to my mind, fashion
is one of the wickedest things in the world. Now
look, for instance, at the way they serve dogs, cut-
1175 ting off their tails to make them look plucky, and
shearing up their pretty little ears to a point
to make them look sharp, forsooth. I had a dear
friend once, a brown terrier—'Skye,' they called
her; she was so fond of me that she never would
1180 sleep out of my stall. She made her bed under
the manger, and there she had a litter of five
as pretty little puppies as need be; none were
drowned, for they were a valuable kind, and how
pleased she was with them! And when they got
1185 their eyes open and crawled about, it was a real
pretty sight; but one day the man came and took
them all away. I thought he might be afraid
I should tread upon them. But it was not so. In
the evening poor Skye brought them back again,
1190 one by one in her mouth, not the happy little
things that they were, but bleeding and crying
pitifully; they had all had a piece of their tails
cut off, and the soft flap of their pretty little ears
was cut quite off. How their mother licked them,
1195 and how troubled she was, poor thing! I never
forgot it. They healed in time, and they forgot
the pain, but the nice soft flap that of course was
intended to protect the delicate part of their ears
from dust and injury, was gone for ever. Why

don't they cut their own children's ears into points ¹²⁰⁰ to make them look sharp? Why don't they cut the end off their noses to make them look plucky? One would be just as sensible as the other. What right have they to torment and disfigure God's creatures?" 1205

Sir Oliver, though he was so gentle, was a fiery old fellow, and what he said was all so new to me and so dreadful, that I found a bitter feeling toward men rise up in my mind that I had never had before. Of course Ginger was much excited; ¹²¹⁰ she flung up her head with flashing eyes, and distended nostrils, declaring that men were both brutes and blockheads.

"Who talks about blockheads?" said Merrylegs, who just came up from the old apple tree, ¹²¹⁵ where he had been rubbing himself against the low branch; "Who talks about blockheads? I believe that is a bad word."

"Bad words were made for bad things," said Ginger, and she told him what Sir Oliver had said, ¹²²⁰ "It is all true," said Merrylegs sadly, "and I've seen that about the dogs over and over again where I lived first; but we won't talk about it here. You know that master, and John, and James are always good to us, and talking against ¹²²⁵ men in such a place as this doesn't seem fair or grateful, and you know there are good masters and good grooms besides ours, though of course ours are the best." This wise speech of good little Merrylegs, which we knew was quite true, ¹²³⁰

cooled us all down, specially Sir Oliver, who was dearly fond of his master; and to turn the subject I said, "Can any one tell me the use of blinkers?"

"No!" said Sir Oliver, shortly, "because they
1235 are of no use."

"They are supposed," said Justice in his calm way, "to prevent horses from shying and starting, and getting so frightened as to cause accidents."

"Then what is the reason they do not put
1240 them on riding horses; especially on ladies' horses?" said I.

"There is no reason at all," said he quietly, "except the fashion; they say that a horse would be so frightened to see the wheels of his own cart
1245 or carriage coming behind him, that he would be sure to run away, although of course when he is ridden, he sees them all about him if the streets are crowded. I admit they do sometimes come too close to be pleasant, but we don't run away;
1250 we are used to it, and understand it, and if we had never had blinkers put on, we should never want them; we should see what was there, and know what was what, and be much less frightened than by only seeing bits of things, that we can't
1255 understand."

Of course there may be some nervous horses who have been hurt or frightened when they were young, and may be the better for them, but as I never was nervous, I can't judge.

1260 "I consider," said Sir Oliver, "that blinkers are dangerous things in the night; we horses can

see much better in the dark than man can, and many an accident would never have happened if horses might have had the full use of their eyes. Some years ago, I remember, there was a hearse ¹²⁶⁵ with two horses returning one dark night, and just by farmer Sparrow's house, where the pond is close to the road, the wheels went too near the edge, and the hearse was overturned into the water; both the horses were drowned, and the ¹²⁷⁰ driver hardly escaped. Of course after this accident a stout white rail was put up that might be easily seen, but if those horses had not been partly blinded, they would of themselves have kept farther from the edge, and no accident would ¹²⁷⁵ have happened. When our master's carriage was overturned, before you came here, it was said, that if the lamp on the left side had not gone out, John would have seen the great hole that the road makers had left; and so he might, but if old Colin ¹²⁸⁰ had not had blinkers on, he would have seen it, lamp or no lamp, for he was far too knowing an old horse to run into danger. As it was, he was very much hurt, the carriage was broken, and how John escaped nobody knew." ¹²⁸⁵

"I should say," said Ginger, curling her nostril, "that these men, who are so wise, had better give orders, that in future, all foals should be born with their eyes set just in the middle of their foreheads, instead of on the side; they always think they can ¹²⁹⁰ improve upon Nature and mend what God has made."

Things were getting rather sore again, when Merrylegs held up his knowing little face and
1295 said, "I'll tell you a secret; I believe John does not approve of blinkers; I heard him talking with master about it one day. The master said, that 'if horses had been used to them, it might be dangerous in some cases to leave them off,' and John
1300 said he thought it would be a good thing if all colts were broken in without blinkers, as was the case in some foreign countries; so let us cheer up, and have a run to the other end of the orchard. I believe the wind has blown down some apples, and
1305 we might just as well eat them as the slugs."

Merrylegs could not be resisted, so we broke off our long conversation, and got up our spirits by munching some very sweet apples which lay scattered on the grass.



CHAPTER XI.

PLAIN SPEAKING

THE longer I lived at Birtwick, the more ¹⁸¹⁰
proud and happy I felt at having such
a place. Our master and mistress were
respected and beloved by all who knew them;
they were good and kind to everybody and every-
thing; not only men and women, but horses and ¹⁸¹⁵
donkeys, dogs and cats, cattle and birds; there
was no oppressed or ill-used creature that had not
a friend in them, and their servants took the same
tone. If any of the village children were known
to treat any creature cruelly, they soon heard ¹⁸²⁰
about it from the Hall,

The Squire and farmer Grey had worked to-
gether, as they said, for more than twenty years,
to get bearing reins on the cart horses done away
with, and in our parts you seldom saw them; but ¹⁸²⁵
sometimes if mistress met a heavily-laden horse,
with his head strained up, she would stop the car-
riage and get out, and reason with the driver in
her sweet serious voice, and try to show him how
foolish and cruel it was. 1830

I don't think any man could withstand our
mistress. I wish all ladies were like her. Our
master too, used to come down very heavy some-
times. I remember he was riding me towards

home one morning, when we saw a powerful man
driving towards us in a light pony chaise, with a
beautiful little bay pony, with slender legs, and
a high-bred sensitive head and face. Just as he
came to the Park gates, the little thing turned
towards them. The man, without word or warn-
ing, wrenched the creature's head round with such



"He began to lash it furiously"

a force and suddenness, that he nearly threw it
on its haunches: recovering itself, it was going
on when he began to lash it furiously. The pony
plunged forward, but the strong heavy hand
held the pretty creature back with force almost
enough to break its jaw, whilst the whip still cut
into him. It was a dreadful sight to me, for I
knew what fearful pain it gave that delicate little

mouth; but master gave me the word, and we ¹⁸⁵⁰ were up with him in a second.

"Sawyer," he cried in a stern voice, "is that pony made of flesh and blood?"

"Flesh and blood and temper," he said; "he's too fond of his own will, and that won't suit me." ¹⁸⁵⁵ He spoke as if he was in a strong passion. He was a builder who had often been to the Park on business. "And do you think," said master sternly, "that treatment like this, will make him fond of your will?" ¹⁸⁶⁰

"He had no business to make that turn; his road was straight on!" said the man roughly.

"You have often driven that pony up to my place," said master; "it only shows the creature's memory and intelligence. How did he know that ¹⁸⁶⁵ you were not going there again? But that has little to do with it. I must say, Mr. Sawyer, that more unmanly, brutal treatment of a little pony, it was never my painful lot to witness; and by giving way to such passion, you injure your own ¹⁸⁷⁰ character as much, nay more, than you injure your horse, and remember, we shall all have to be judged according to our works, whether they be towards man or towards beast."

Master rode me home slowly, and I could tell ¹⁸⁷⁵ by his voice how the thing had grieved him. He was just as free to speak to gentlemen of his own rank as to those below him; for another day, when we were out, we met a Captain Langley, a friend of our master's; he was driving a splendid ¹⁸⁸⁰

pair of grays in a kind of break. After a little conversation the Captain said,

"What do you think of my new team, Mr. Douglas? You know, you are the judge of horses
1385 in these parts, and I should like your opinion."

The master backed me a little, so as to get a good view of them. "They are an uncommonly handsome pair," he said, "and if they are as good as they look, I am sure you need not wish for
1390 anything better; but I see you still hold to that pet scheme of yours for worrying your horses and lessening their power."

"What do you mean," said the other, "the bearing reins? Oh, ah! I know that's a hobby of
1395 yours; well, the fact is, I like to see my horses hold their heads up."

"So do I," said master, "as well as any man, but I don't like to see them *held up*; that takes all the shine out of it. Now you are a military man,
1400 Langley, and no doubt like to see your regiment look well on parade, 'Heads up,' and all that; but you would not take much credit for your drill, if all your men had their heads tied to a back-board! It might not be much harm on parade,
1405 except to worry and fatigue them, but how would it be in a bayonet charge against the enemy, when they want the free use of every muscle, and all their strength thrown forward? I would not give much for their chance of victory, and it is just
1410 the same with horses; you fret and worry their tempers, and decrease their power; you will not

let them throw their weight against their work, and so they have to do too much with their joints and muscles, and of course it wears them up faster. You may depend upon it, horses were intended ¹⁴¹⁵ to have their heads free, as free as men's are; and if we could act a little more according to common sense, and a good deal less according to fashion, we should find many things work easier. Besides, you know as well as I, that if a horse makes a ¹⁴²⁰ false step, he has much less chance of recovering himself if his head and neck are fastened back. And now," said the master, laughing, "I have given my hobby a good trot out; can't you make up your mind to mount him too, Captain? Your ¹⁴²⁵ example would go a long way."

"I believe you are right in theory," said the other; "and that's rather a hard hit about the soldiers; but—well—I'll think about it," and so they parted.

1430



CHAPTER XII.

A STORMY DAY

ONE day late in the autumn, my master had a long journey to go on business. I was put into the dog-cart, and John went with his master. I always liked to go in the dog-cart, 1435 it was so light, and the high wheels ran along so pleasantly. There had been a great deal of rain, and now the wind was very high, and blew the dry leaves across the road in a shower. We went along merrily till we came to the toll-bar, and the 1440 low wooden bridge. The river banks were rather high, and the bridge, instead of rising, went across just level, so that in the middle, if the river was full, the water would be nearly up to the woodwork and planks; but as there were good 1445 substantial rails on each side, people did not mind it.

The man at the gate said the river was rising fast, and he feared it would be a bad night. Many of the meadows were under water, and in one low 1450 part of the road, the water was half way up to my knees; the bottom was good, and master drove gently, so it was no matter.

When we got to the town, of course I had a good bait, but as the master's business engaged 1455 him a long time, we did not start for home till

rather late in the afternoon. The wind was then much higher, and I heard the master say to John, he had never been out in such a storm; and so I thought, as we went along the skirts of a wood, where the great branches were swaying about ¹⁴⁶⁰ like twigs, and the rushing sound was terrible.

"I wish we were well out of this wood," said my master.

"Yes, sir," said John, "it would be rather awkward if one of these branches came down ¹⁴⁶⁵ upon us."

The words were scarcely out of his mouth, when there was a groan, and a crack, and a splitting sound, and tearing, crashing down amongst the other trees, came an oak, torn up by the ¹⁴⁷⁰ roots, and it fell right across the road just before us. I will never say I was not frightened, for I was. I stopped still, and I believe I trembled; of course I did not turn round or run away; I was not brought up to that. John jumped out and ¹⁴⁷⁵ was in a moment at my head.

"That was a very near touch," said my master. "What's to be done now?"

"Well, sir, we can't drive over that tree nor yet get round it; there will be nothing for it, ¹⁴⁸⁰ but to go back to the four cross-ways, and that will be a good six miles before we get round to the wooden bridge again. It will make us late, but the horse is fresh."

So back we went, and round by the cross roads, ¹⁴⁸⁵ but by the time we got to the bridge, it was very

nearly dark. We could just see that the water was over the middle of it; but as that happened sometimes when the floods were out, master did not
1490 stop. We were going along at a good pace, but the moment my feet touched the first part of the bridge, I felt sure there was something wrong. I dare not go forward, and I made a dead stop. "Go on, Beauty," said my master, and he gave
1495 me a touch of the whip, but I dare not stir. He gave me a sharp cut; I jumped, but I dare not go forward.

"There's something wrong, sir," said John, and he sprang out of the dog-cart, and came to
1500 my head and looked all about. He tried to lead me forward, "Come on, Beauty, what's the matter?" Of course I could not tell him, but I knew very well that the bridge was not safe.

Just then, the man at the toll-gate on the other
1505 side ran out of the house, tossing a torch about like one mad.

"Hoy, hoy, hoy, halloo, stop!" he cried.

"What's the matter?" shouted my master.

"The bridge is broken in the middle, and part
1510 of it is carried away; if you come on you'll be into the river."

"Thank God!" said my master. "You Beauty!" said John, and took the bridle and gently turned me round to the right-hand road by the river side.
1515 The sun had set some time, the wind seemed to have lulled off after that furious blast which tore up the tree. It grew darker and darker, stiller

and stiller. I trotted quietly along, the wheels hardly making a sound on the soft road. For a good while neither master nor John spoke, and then master began in a serious voice. I could not understand much of what they said, but I found they thought, if I had gone on as the master wanted me, most likely the bridge would have given way under us, and horse, chaise, master, and man would have fallen into the river; and as the current was flowing very strongly, and there was no light and no help at hand, it was more than likely we should all have been drowned. Master said, God had given men reason, by which they could find out things for themselves, but He had given animals knowledge which did not depend on reason, and which was much more prompt and perfect in its way, and by which they had often saved the lives of men. John had many stories to tell of dogs and horses, and the wonderful things they had done; he thought people did not value their animals half enough, nor make friends of them as they ought to do. I am sure he makes friends of them if ever a man did.

At last we came to the Park gates, and found the gardener looking out for us. He said that mistress had been in a dreadful way ever since dark, fearing some accident had happened, that she had sent James off on Justice, the roan cob, towards the wooden bridge to make inquiry after us.

We saw a light at the hall door and at the
1550 upper windows, and as we came up, mistress ran
out, saying, "Are you really safe, my dear? Oh!
I have been so anxious, fancying all sorts of
things. Have you had no accident?"

"No, my dear; but, if your Black Beauty had
1555 not been wiser than we were, we should all have
been carried down the river at the wooden bridge."
I heard no more, as they went into the house, and
John took me to the stable. Oh! what a good sup-
per he gave me that night, a good bran mash and
1560 some crushed beans with my oats, and such a
thick bed of straw, and I was glad of it, for I was
tired.



CHAPTER XIII.

THE DEVIL'S TRADE MARK

ONE day when John and I had been out on some business of our master's, and were returning gently on a long straight road, ¹⁵⁶⁵ at some distance we saw a boy trying to leap a pony over a gate. The pony would not take the leap, and the boy cut him with the whip, but he only turned off on one side; he whipped him



"The pony would not take the leap"

again, but the pony turned off on the other side. ¹⁵⁷⁰ Then the boy got off and gave him a hard thrashing, and knocked him about the head; then he got up again and tried to make him leap the gate, kicking him all the time shamefully, but still the pony refused. When we were nearly at the spot, ¹⁵⁷⁵ the pony put down his head and threw up his heels and sent the boy neatly over into a broad

quickset hedge, and with the rein dangling from his head, he set off home at a full gallop. John
1580 laughed out quite loud. "Served him right," he said.

"Oh! oh! oh!" cried the boy, as he struggled about amongst the thorns; "I say, come and help me out."

1585 "Thank ye," said John, "I think you are quite in the right place, and maybe a little scratching will teach you not to leap a pony over a gate that is too high for him," and so with that John rode off. "It may be," said he to himself, "that young
1590 fellow is a liar as well as a cruel one; we'll just go home by farmer Bushby's, Beauty, and then if anybody wants to know, you and I can tell 'em, ye see." So we turned off to the right, and soon came up to the stack yard, and within sight of
1595 the house. The farmer was hurrying out into the road, and his wife was standing at the gate, looking very frightened.

"Have you seen my boy?" said Mr. Bushby, as we came up, "he went out an hour ago on my
1600 black pony, and the creature is just come back without a rider."

"I should think, sir," said John, "he had better be without a rider, unless he can be ridden properly."

1605 "What do you mean?" said the farmer.

"Well, sir, I saw your son whipping, and kicking, and knocking that good little pony about shamefully, because he would not leap a gate that

was too high for him. The pony behaved well, sir, and showed no vice; but at last he just threw ¹⁶¹⁰ up his heels, and tipped the young gentleman into the thorn hedge. He wanted me to help him out; but I hope you will excuse me, sir, I did not feel inclined to do so. There's no bones broken, sir; he'll only get a few scratches. I love horses, ¹⁶¹⁵ and it roils me to see them badly used. It is a bad plan to aggravate an animal till he uses his heels; the first time is not always the last."

During this time the mother began to cry, "Oh, my poor Bill, I must go and meet him; he must ¹⁶²⁰ be hurt."

"You had better go into the house, wife," said the farmer; "Bill wants a lesson about this, and I must see that he gets it. This is not the first time nor the second that he has ill-used that ¹⁶²⁵ pony, and I shall stop it. I am much obliged to you, Manly. Good evening."

So we went on, John chuckling all the way home; then he told James about it, who laughed and said, "Serve him right. I knew that boy at ¹⁶³⁰ school. He took great airs on himself because he was a farmer's son. He used to swagger about and bully the little boys. Of course we elder ones would not have any of that nonsense, and let him know that in the school and the playground, ¹⁶³⁵ farmers' sons and laborers' sons were all alike. I well remember one day, just before afternoon school, I found him at the large window catching flies and pulling off their wings. He did not see

1640 me, and I gave him a box on the ears that laid him sprawling on the floor. Well, angry as I was, I was almost frightened, he roared and bel-
lowsed in such a style. The boys rushed in from the playground, and the master ran in from the
1645 road to see who was being murdered. Of course I said fair and square at once what I had done, and why; then I showed the master the poor flies, some crushed and some crawling about helpless, and I showed him the wings on the window sill.
1650 I never saw him so angry before; but as Bill was still howling and whining, like the coward that he was, he did not give him any more punishment of that kind, but set him up on a stool for the rest of the afternoon, and said that he should
1655 not go out to play for that week. Then he talked to all the boys very seriously about cruelty, and said how hard-hearted and cowardly it was to hurt the weak and the helpless. But what stuck in my mind was this: he said that cruelty was
1660 the Devil's own trade mark, and if we saw any one who took pleasure in cruelty, we might know who he belonged to, for the devil was a murderer from the beginning, and a tormentor to the end. On the other hand, where we saw people
1665 who loved their neighbors, and were kind to man and beast, we might know that was God's mark, for 'God is Love.'"

"Your master never taught you a truer thing," said John; "there is no religion without love,
1670 and people may talk as much as they like about

their religion, but if it does not teach them to be good and kind to man and beast, it is all a sham — all a sham, James, and it won't stand when things come to be turned inside out and put down for what they are."

1675



CHAPTER XIV.

JAMES HOWARD

ONE morning early in December, John had just led me into my box after my daily exercise, and was strapping my cloth on, and James was coming in from the corn chamber



"Have you any complaint to make of James?"

1680 with some oats, when the master came into the stable. He looked rather serious, and held an open letter in his hand. John fastened the door of my box, touched his cap, and waited for orders.

"Good morning, John," said the master; "I want to know if you have any complaint to make 1685 of James?"

"Complaint, sir? No, sir."

"Is he industrious at his work and respectful to you?"

"Yes, sir, always." 1690

"You never find he slights his work when your back is turned?"

"Never, sir."

"That's well; but I must put another question. Have you any reason to suspect that when 1695 he goes out with the horses to exercise them, or to take a message, he stops about talking to his acquaintances, or goes into houses where he has no business, leaving the horses outside?"

"No, sir, certainly not, and if anybody has been 1700 saying that about James, I don't believe it, and I don't mean to believe it unless I have it fairly proved before witnesses. It's not for me to say who has been trying to take away James' character, but I will say this, sir, that a steadier, pleas- 1705 anter, honester, smarter young fellow I never had in this stable. I can trust his word and I can trust his work. He is gentle and clever with the horses, and I would rather have them in his charge than in that of half the young fellows I 1710 know in laced hats and liveries; and whoever wants a character of James Howard," said John, with a decided jerk of his head, "let them come to John Manly."

1715 The master stood all this time grave and attentive, but as John finished his speech, a broad smile spread over his face, and looking kindly across at James, who all this time had stood at the door, he said, "James, my lad, set down the
1720 oats and come here. I am very glad to find that John's opinion of your character agrees so exactly with my own. John is a cautious man," he said, with a droll smile, "and it is not always easy to get his opinion about people, so I thought if I beat
1725 the bush on this side, the birds would fly out, and I should learn what I wanted to know quickly; so now we will come to business. I have a letter from my brother-in-law, Sir Clifford Williams, of Clifford Hall. He wants me to find him a trust-
1730 worthy young groom, about twenty or twenty-one, who knows his business. His old coachman, who has lived with him twenty years, is getting feeble, and he wants a man to work with him and get into his ways, who would be able, when the old
1735 man was pensioned off, to step into his place. He would have eighteen shillings a week at first, a stable suit, a driving suit, a bedroom over the coach-house, and a boy under him. Sir Clifford is a good master, and if you could get the place, it
1740 would be a good start for you. I don't want to part with you, and if you left us, I know John would lose his right hand."

"That I should, sir," said John, "but I would not stand in his light for the world."

1745 "How old are you, James?" said master.

"Nineteen next May, sir."

"That's young; what do you think, John?"

"Well, sir, it is young: but he is as steady as a man, and is strong, and well grown, and though he has not had much experience in driving, he ¹⁷⁵⁰ has a light firm hand, and a quick eye, and he is very careful; and I am quite sure no horse of his will be ruined for want of having his feet and shoes looked after."

"Your word will go the furthest, John," said ¹⁷⁵⁵ the master, "for Sir Clifford adds in a postscript, 'If I could find a man trained by your John, I should like him better than any other'; so James, lad, think it over, talk to your mother at dinner time, and then let me know what you wish." ¹⁷⁶⁰

In a few days after this conversation, it was fully settled that James should go to Clifford Hall in a month or six weeks, as it suited his master, and in the meantime he was to get all the practice in driving that could be given to him. ¹⁷⁶⁵ I never knew the carriage go out so often before. When the mistress did not go out, the master drove himself in the two-wheeled chaise; but now, whether it was master or the young ladies, or only an errand, Ginger and I were put into ¹⁷⁷⁰ the carriage and James drove us. At the first, John rode with him on the box, telling him this and that, and after that James drove alone.

Then it was wonderful what a number of places the master would go to in the city on ¹⁷⁷⁵ Saturday, and what queer streets we were driven

through. He was sure to go to the railway station just as the train was coming in, and cabs and carriages, carts and omnibuses were all trying
1780 to get over the bridge together. That bridge wanted good horses and good drivers when the railway bell was ringing, for it was narrow, and there was a very sharp turn up to the station, where it would not have been at all difficult for
1785 people to run into each other, if they did not look sharp and keep their wits about them.



CHAPTER XV.

THE OLD OSTLER

AFTER this, it was decided by my master and mistress to pay a visit to some friends who lived about forty-six miles from our home, and James was to drive them. The first ¹⁷⁹⁰ day we traveled thirty-two miles. There were some long heavy hills, but James drove so carefully and thoughtfully that we were not at all harassed. He never forgot to put on the drag as we went downhill, nor to take it off at the right ¹⁷⁹⁵ place. He kept our feet on the smoothest part of the road, and if the uphill was very long, he set the carriage wheels a little across the road, so as not to run back, and gave us a breathing. All these little things help a horse very much, par-¹⁸⁰⁰ ticularly if he gets kind words into the bargain.

We stopped once or twice on the road, and just as the sun was going down, we reached the town where we were to spend the night. We stopped at the principal hotel, which was in the Market ¹⁸⁰⁵ Place. It was a very large one. We drove under an archway into a long yard, at the further end of which were the stables and coach-houses. Two ostlers came to take us out. The head ostler was a pleasant, active little man, with a crooked leg, and ¹⁸¹⁰ a yellow striped waistcoat. I never saw a man

unbuckle harness so quickly as he did, and with a pat and a good word he led me to a long stable, with six or eight stalls in it, and two or three
1815 horses. The other man brought Ginger. James stood by whilst we were rubbed down and cleaned.

I never was cleaned so lightly and quickly as by that little old man. When he had done, James stepped up and felt me over, as if he
1820 thought I could not be thoroughly done, but he found my coat as clean and smooth as silk.

"Well," he said, "I thought I was pretty quick, and our John quicker still, but you do beat all I ever saw for being quick and thorough at the
1825 same time."

"Practice makes perfect," said the crooked little ostler, "and 'twould be a pity if it didn't; forty years' practice, and not perfect! ha, ha! that would be a pity; and as to being quick, why,
1830 bless you! that is only a matter of habit. If you get into the habit of being quick, it is just as easy as being slow; easier, I should say. In fact, it don't agree with my health to be hulking about over a job twice as long as it need take.
1835 Bless you! I couldn't whistle if I crawled over my work as some folks do! You see, I have been about horses ever since I was twelve years old, in hunting stables, and racing stables; and being small, ye see, I was jockey for several years; but
1840 at the Goodwood, ye see, the turf was very slippery and my poor Larkspur got a fall, and I broke my knee, and so of course I was of no more

use there. But I could not live without horses, of course I couldn't, so I took to the Hotels, and I can tell ye it is a downright pleasure to handle ¹⁸⁴⁵ an animal like this, well-bred, well-mannered, well-cared for; bless ye! I can tell how a horse is treated. Give me the handling of a horse for twenty minutes, and I'll tell you what sort of a groom he has had. Look at this one, pleasant, ¹⁸⁵⁰ quiet, turns about just as you want him, holds up his feet to be cleaned out, or anything else you please to wish; then you'll find another, fidgety, fretty, won't move the right way, or starts across the stall, tosses up his head as soon as you come ¹⁸⁵⁵ near him, lays his ears, and seems afraid of you; or else squares about at you with his heels. Poor things! I know what sort of treatment they have had. If they are timid, it makes them start or shy; if they are high-mettled, it makes them ¹⁸⁶⁰ vicious or dangerous. Their tempers are mostly made when they are young. Bless you! they are like children; train 'em up in the way they should go, as the good book says, and when they are old they will not depart from it, if they have a chance, ¹⁸⁶⁵ that is."

"I like to hear you talk," said James, "that's the way we lay it down at home, at our master's."

"Who is your master, young man, if it be a proper question? I should judge he is a good one, ¹⁸⁷⁰ from what I see."

"He is Squire Gordon, of Birtwick Park, the other side the Beacon hills," said James.

"Ah! so, so, I have heard tell of him. Fine judge
1876 of horses, ain't he? the best rider in the country?"

"I believe he is," said James, "but he rides
very little now, since the poor young master was
killed."

"Ah! poor gentleman; I read all about it in the
1880 paper at the time. A fine horse killed too, wasn't
there?"

"Yes," said James, "he was a splendid creature,
brother to this one, and just like him."

"Pity! pity!" said the old man, "'twas a bad
1888 place to leap, if I remember; a thin fence at top,
a steep bank down to the stream, wasn't it? no
chance for a horse to see where he is going. Now,
I am for bold riding as much as any man, but still
there are some leaps that only a very knowing
1890 old huntsman has any right to take; a man's life
and a horse's life are worth more than a fox's tail,
at least I should say they ought to be."

During this time the other man had finished
Ginger, and had brought our corn, and James and
1898 the old man left the stable together.



CHAPTER XVI.

THE FIRE

LATER on in the evening, a traveler's horse was brought in by the second ostler, and whilst he was cleaning him, a young man with a pipe in his mouth lounged into the stable to gossip.

1900

"I say, Towler," said the ostler, "just run up the ladder into the loft and put some hay down into this horse's rack, will you? only lay down your pipe."

"All right," said the other, and went up through the trap door; and I heard him step across the floor overhead and put down the hay. James came in to look at us the last thing, and then the door was locked.

I cannot say how long I had slept, nor what time in the night it was, but I woke up very uncomfortable, though I hardly knew why. I got up, the air seemed all thick and choking. I heard Ginger coughing, and one of the other horses moved about restlessly; it was quite dark, and I could see nothing, but the stable was full of smoke and I hardly knew how to breathe.

The trap door had been left open, and I thought that was the place it came through. I listened and heard a soft rushing sort of noise, and a low

crackling and snapping. I did not know what it was, but there was something in the sound so strange, that it made me tremble all over. The other horses were now all awake; some were pulling at their halters, others were stamping.

At last I heard steps outside, and the ostler who had put up the traveler's horse burst into the stable with a lantern, and began to untie the horses, and try to lead them out; but he seemed in such a hurry, and so frightened himself that he frightened me still more. The first horse would not go with him. He tried the second and third; they too would not stir. He came to me next and tried to drag me out of the stall by force; of course that was no use. He tried us all by turns and then left the stable.

No doubt we were very foolish, but danger seemed to be all round, and there was nobody we knew to trust in, and all was strange and uncertain. The fresh air that had come in through the open door made it easier to breathe, but the rushing sound overhead grew louder, and as I looked upward, through the bars of my empty rack, I saw a red light flickering on the wall. Then I heard a cry of "Fire" outside, and the old ostler quietly and quickly came in; he got one horse out, and went to another, but the flames were playing round the trap door, and the roaring overhead was dreadful.

The next thing I heard was James' voice, quiet and cheery, as it always was.

"Come, my beauties, it is time for us to be off, so wake up and come along." I stood nearest the door, so he came to me first, patting me as he came in.

1955

"Come, Beauty, on with your bridle, my boy, we'll soon be out of this smother." It was on in



"He led me out of the stable"

no time; then he took the scarf off his neck, and tied it lightly over my eyes, and patting and coaxing he led me out of the stable. Safe in the yard, 1960 he slipped the scarf off my eyes, and shouted, "Here somebody! take this horse while I go back for the other."

A tall broad man stepped forward and took me,
1965 and James darted back into the stable. I set up
a shrill whinny as I saw him go. Ginger told me
afterwards, that whinny was the best thing I could
have done for her, for had she not heard me out-
side, she would never have had courage to come
1970 out.

There was much confusion in the yard; the
horses being got out of other stables, and the car-
riages and gigs being pulled out of houses and
sheds, lest the flames should spread further. On
1975 the other side the yard, windows were thrown up,
and people were shouting all sorts of things, but
I kept my eye fixed on the stable door, where the
smoke poured out thicker than ever, and I could
see flashes of red light. Presently I heard above
1980 all the stir and din a loud clear voice, which I
knew was master's:—

“James Howard! James Howard! are you
there?” There was no answer, but I heard a
crash of something falling in the stable, and the
1985 next moment I gave a loud joyful neigh, for I
saw James coming through the smoke leading
Ginger with him; she was coughing violently and
he was not able to speak

“My brave lad!” said master, laying his hand
1990 on his shoulder, “are you hurt?”

James shook his head, for he could not yet
speak.

“Aye,” said the big man who held me, “he is a
brave lad, and no mistake.”

"And now," said master, "when you have got¹⁹⁹⁵ your breath, James, we'll get out of this place as quickly as we can," and we were moving towards the entry, when from the Market Place there came a sound of galloping feet and loud rumbling wheels.

2000

"'Tis the fire engine! the fire engine!" shouted two or three voices, "stand back, make way!" and clattering and thundering over the stones two horses dashed into the yard with the heavy engine behind them. The firemen leaped to the²⁰⁰⁵ ground; there was no need to ask where the fire was—it was torching up in a great blaze from the roof.

We got out as fast as we could into the broad quiet Market Place; the stars were shining, and²⁰¹⁰ except the noise behind us, all was still. Master led the way to a large Hotel on the other side, and as soon as the ostler came, he said, "James, I must now hasten to your mistress. I trust the horses entirely to you; order whatever you think is²⁰¹⁵ needed," and with that he was gone. The master did not run, but I never saw mortal man walk so fast as he did that night.

There was a dreadful sound before we got into our stalls; the shrieks of those poor horses that²⁰²⁰ were left burning to death in the stable—it was very terrible! and made both Ginger and me feel very bad. We, however, were taken in and well done by.

The next morning the master came to see how²⁰²⁵

we were and to speak to James. I did not hear much, for the ostler was rubbing me down, but I could see that James looked very happy, and I thought the master was proud of him. Our mistress had been so much alarmed in the night, that the journey was put off till the afternoon, so James had the morning on hand, and went first to the inn to see about our harness and the carriage, and then to hear more about the fire. When he came back, we heard him tell the ostler about it. At first no one could guess how the fire had been caused, but at last a man said he saw Dick Towler go into the stable with a pipe in his mouth, and when he came out he had not one, and went to the tap for another. Then the under ostler said he had asked Dick to go up the ladder to put down some hay, but told him to lay down his pipe first. Dick denied taking the pipe with him, but no one believed him. I remember our John Manly's rule, never to allow a pipe in the stable, and thought it ought to be the rule everywhere.

James said the roof and floor had all fallen in, and that only the black walls were standing; the two poor horses that could not be got out, were buried under the burnt rafters and tiles.



CHAPTER XVII.

JOHN MANLY'S TALK

THE rest of our journey was very easy, and a little after sunset we reached the house of my master's friend. We were taken into a clean snug stable; there was a kind coachman, who made us very comfortable, and who seemed ²⁰⁶⁵ to think a good deal of James when he heard about the fire.

"There is one thing quite clear, young man," he said, "your horses know who they can trust; it is one of the hardest things in the world to get ²⁰⁶⁰ horses out of a stable, when there is either fire or flood. I don't know why they won't come out, but they won't—not one in twenty."

We stopped two or three days at this place and then returned home. All went well on the jour- ²⁰⁶⁵ ney; we were glad to be in our own stable again, and John was equally glad to see us.

Before he and James left us for the night, James said, "I wonder who is coming in my place."

"Little Joe Green at the Lodge," said John. 2070

"Little Joe Green! why, he's a child!"

"He is fourteen and a half," said John.

"But he is such a little chap!"

"Yes, he is small, but he is quick, and willing, ²⁰⁷⁵

and kind-hearted too, and then he wishes very much to come, and his father would like it; and I know the master would like to give him the chance. He said, if I thought he would not do, 2080 he would look out for a bigger boy; but I said I was quite agreeable to try him for six weeks."

"Six weeks!" said James, "why, it will be six months before he can be of much use! It will make you a deal of work, John."

2085 "Well," said John with a laugh, "work and I are very good friends; I never was afraid of work yet."

"You are a very good man," said James, "I wish I may ever be like you."

2090 "I don't often speak of myself," said John, "but as you are going away from us out into the world, to shift for yourself, I'll just tell you how I look on these things. I was just as old as Joseph when my father and mother died of the fever, 2095 within ten days of each other, and left me and my crippled sister Nelly alone in the world, without a relation that we could look to for help. I was a farmer's boy, not earning enough to keep myself, much less both of us, and she must have gone to 2100 the workhouse, but for our mistress (Nelly calls her, her angel, and she has good right to do so). She went and hired a room for her with old widow Mallet, and she gave her knitting and needle-work, when she was able to do it; and when she 2105 was ill, she sent her dinners and many nice comfortable things, and was like a mother to her.

Then the master, he took me into the stable under old Norman, the coachman that was then. I had my food at the house, and my bed in the loft, and a suit of clothes and three shillings a week, so²¹¹⁰ that I could help Nelly. Then there was Norman; he might have turned round and said that at his age he could not be troubled with a raw boy from the plow-tail, but he was like a father to me, and took no end of pains with me. When²¹¹⁵ the old man died some years after, I stepped into his place, and now of course I have top wages, and can lay by for a rainy day or a sunny day as it may happen, and Nelly is as happy as a bird. So you see, James, I am not the man that should²¹²⁰ turn up his nose at a little boy, and vex a good, kind master. No! no! I shall miss you very much, James, but we shall pull through, and there's nothing like doing a kindness when 'tis put in your way, and I am glad I can do it."²¹²⁵

"Then," said James, "you don't hold with that saying, 'Everybody look after himself, and take care of number one.'"

"No, indeed," said John, "where should I and Nelly have been, if master and mistress and old²¹³⁰ Norman had only taken care of number one? Why—she in the workhouse and I hoeing turnips! Where would Black Beauty and Ginger have been if you had only thought of number one? Why, roasted to death! No, Jim, no! that²¹³⁵ is a selfish, heathenish saying, whoever uses it, and any man who thinks he has nothing to do

but take care of number one, why, it's a pity but what he had been drowned like a puppy or a kitten, before he got his eyes open, that's what I think," said John, with a very decided jerk of his head.

James laughed at this; but there was a thickness in his voice when he said, "You have been my best friend except my mother; I hope you won't forget me."

"No, lad, no!" said John, "and if ever I can do you a good turn, I hope you won't forget me."

The next day Joe came to the stables to learn all he could before James left. He learned to sweep the stable, to bring in the straw and hay; he began to clean the harness, and helped to wash the carriage. As he was quite too short to do anything in the way of grooming Ginger and me, James taught him upon Merrylegs, for he was to have full charge of him, under John. He was a nice little bright fellow, and always came whistling to his work.

Merrylegs was a good deal put out, at being "mauled about," as he said, "by a boy who knew nothing"; but towards the end of the second week, he told me confidentially that he thought the boy would turn out well.

At last the day came when James had to leave us; cheerful as he always was, he looked quite down-hearted that morning.

"You see," he said to John, "I am leaving a great deal behind; my mother and Betsy, and you,

and a good master and mistress, and then the horses, and my old Merrylegs. At the new place, ²¹⁷⁰ there will not be a soul that I shall know. If it were not that I shall get a higher place, and be able to help my mother better, I don't think I should have made up my mind to it; it is a real pinch, John."

2175

"Aye, James, lad, so it is, but I should not think much of you, if you could leave your home for the



"Trotting and galloping by my side"

first time and not feel it. Cheer up, you'll make friends there, and if you get on well—as I am sure you will—it will be a fine thing for your ²¹⁸⁰ mother, and she will be proud enough that you have got into such a good place as that."

So John cheered him up, but every one was sorry to lose James; as for Merrylegs, he pined after him for several days, and went quite off his ²¹⁸⁵

appetite. So John took him out several mornings with a leading rein, when he exercised me, and trotting and galloping by my side, got up the little fellow's spirits again, and he was soon
2190 all right.

Joe's father would often come in and give a little help, as he understood the work, and Joe took a great deal of pains to learn, and John was quite encouraged about him.



CHAPTER XVIII.

GOING FOR THE DOCTOR.

ONE night, a few days after James had left, I²¹⁹⁵ had eaten my hay and was laid down in my straw fast asleep, when I was suddenly awoke by the stable bell ringing very loud. I heard the door of John's house open, and his feet running up to the Hall. He was²²⁰⁰ back again in no time. He unlocked the stable door, and came in, calling out, "Wake up, Beauty, you must go well now, if ever you did"; and almost before I could think, he had got the saddle on my back and the bridle on my head. He just²²⁰⁵ ran round for his coat, and then took me at a quick trot up to the Hall door. The Squire stood there with a lamp in his hand.

"Now, John," he said, "ride for your life, that is, for your mistress's life; there is not a moment²²¹⁰ to lose. Give this note to Doctor White; give your horse a rest at the Inn, and be back as soon as you can."

John said, "Yes, sir," and was on my back in a minute. The gardener who lived at the lodge had²²¹⁵ heard the bell ring, and was ready with the gate open, and away we went through the Park and through the village, and down the hill till we

came to the toll-gate. John called very loud and
2220 thumped upon the door: the man was soon out
and flung open the gate.

"Now," said John, "do you keep the gate open
for the Doctor; here's the money," and off we went
again.

2225 There was before us a long piece of level road
by the river side. John said to me, "Now, Beauty,
do your best," and so I did; I wanted no whip
nor spur, and for two miles I galloped as fast as I
could lay my feet to the ground; I don't believe
2230 that my old grandfather who won the race at
Newmarket, could have gone faster. When we
came to the bridge, John pulled me up a little
and patted my neck. "Well done, Beauty! good
old fellow," he said. He would have let me go
2235 slower, but my spirit was up, and I was off again
as fast as before. The air was frosty, the moon
was bright, it was very pleasant; we came through
a village, then through a dark wood, then uphill,
then downhill, till after an eight miles run we
2240 came to the town, through the streets and into the
Market Place. It was all quite still except the
clatter of my feet on the stones—everybody was
asleep. The church clock struck three as we
drew up at Doctor White's door. John rang the
2245 bell twice, and then knocked at the door like
thunder. A window was thrown up, and Doctor
White, in his nightcap, put his head out and said,
"What do you want?"

"Mrs. Gordon is very ill, sir; master wants you

to go at once; he thinks she will die if you cannot ²²⁶⁰ get there — here is a note."

"Wait," he said, "I will come."

He shut the window, and was soon at the door.

"The worst of it is," he said, "that my horse has been out all day and is quite done up; my ²²⁵⁵ son has just been sent for, and he has taken the other. What is to be done? Can I have your horse?"

"He has come at a gallop nearly all the way, sir, and I was to give him a rest here; but I think ²²⁶⁰ my master would not be against it if you think fit, sir."

"All right," he said, "I will soon be ready."

John stood by me and stroked my neck, I was very hot. The Doctor came out with his riding ²²⁶⁵ whip.

"You need not take that, sir," said John, "Black Beauty will go till he drops. Take care of him, sir, if you can; I should not like any harm to come to him." ²²⁷⁰

"No! no! John," said the Doctor, "I hope not," and in a minute we had left John far behind.

I will not tell about our way back. The Doctor was a heavier man than John, and not so good a rider; however, I did my very best. The man at ²²⁷⁵ the toll-gate had it open. When we came to the hill, the Doctor drew me up. "Now, my good fellow," he said, "take some breath." I was glad he did, for I was nearly spent, but that breathing helped me on, and soon we were in the Park. ²²⁸⁰

Joe was at the lodge gate; my master was at the Hall door, for he had heard us coming. He spoke not a word; the Doctor went into the house with him, and Joe led me to the stable. I was glad to
2285 get home, my legs shook under me, and I could only stand and pant. I had not a dry hair on my body, the water ran down my legs, and I steamed all over—Joe used to say, like a pot on the fire. Poor Joe! he was young and small, and as yet he
2290 knew very little, and his father, who would have helped him, had been sent to the next village; but I am sure he did the very best he knew. He rubbed my legs and my chest, but he did not put my warm cloth on me; he thought I was so hot I
2295 should not like it. Then he gave me a pail full of water to drink; it was cold and very good, and I drank it all; then he gave me some hay and some corn, and thinking he had done right, he went away. Soon I began to shake and tremble,
2300 and turned deadly cold, my legs ached, my loins ached, and my chest ached, and I felt sore all over. Oh! how I wished for my warm thick cloth as I stood and trembled. I wished for John, but he had eight miles to walk, so I lay down in my
2305 straw and tried to go to sleep. After a long while I heard John at the door; I gave a low moan, for I was in great pain. He was at my side in a moment stooping down by me. I could not tell him how I felt, but he seemed to know it all;
2310 he covered me up with two or three warm cloths, and then ran to the house for some hot water. He

made me some warm gruel which I drank, and then I think I went to sleep.

John seemed to be very much put out. I heard him say to himself, over and over again, "Stupid ²⁸¹⁵ boy! stupid boy! no cloth put on, and I dare say the water was cold too; boys are no good." But Joe was a good boy after all.

I was now very ill; a strong inflammation had attacked my lungs, and I could not draw my ²⁸²⁰ breath without pain. John nursed me night and day. He would get up two or three times in the night to come to me. My master, too, often came to see me. "My poor Beauty," he said one day, "my good horse, you saved your mistress's life, ²⁸²⁵ Beauty! yes, you saved her life." I was very glad to hear that, for it seems the Doctor had said if we had been a little longer it would have been too late. John told my master he never saw a horse go so fast in his life, it seemed as if the ²⁸³⁰ horse knew what was the matter. Of course I did, though John thought not; at least I knew as much as this, that John and I must go at the top of our speed, and that it was for the sake of the mistress.

2835



CHAPTER XIX.

ONLY IGNORANCE

I DO not know how long I was ill. Mr. Bond, the horse doctor, came every day. One day he bled me; John held a pail for the blood. I felt very faint after it, and thought I should
2840 die, and I believe they all thought so too.

Ginger and Merrylegs had been moved into the other stable, so that I might be quiet, for the fever made me very quick of hearing; any little noise seemed quite loud, and I could tell every-
2845 one's footstep going to and from the house. I knew all that was going on. One night John had to give me a draught; Thomas Green came in to help him. After I had taken it and John had made me as comfortable as he could, he said he should
2850 stay half an hour to see how the medicine settled. Thomas said he would stay with him, so they went and sat down on a bench that had been brought into Merrylegs' stall, and put down the lantern at their feet, that I might not be disturbed
2855 with the light.

For a while both men sat silent, and then Tom Green said in a low voice,

"I wish, John, you'd say a bit of a kind word to Joe. The boy is quite broken-hearted; he can't
2860 eat his meals, and he can't smile. He says he

knows it was all his fault, though he is sure he did the best he knew, and he says, if Beauty dies, no one will ever speak to him again. It goes to my heart to hear him. I think you might give him just a word; he is not a bad boy." 2365

After a short pause, John said slowly, "You must not be too hard upon me, Tom. I know he meant no harm; I never said he did. I know he is not a bad boy, but you see I am sore myself. That horse is the pride of my heart, to say nothing of 2370 his being such a favorite with the master and mistress, and to think that his life may be flung away in this manner is more than I can bear; but if you think I am hard on the boy, I will try to give him a good word to-morrow—that is, I 2375 mean if Beauty is better."

"Well, John, thank you! I knew you did not wish to be too hard, and I am glad you see it was only ignorance."

John's voice almost startled me as he answered, 2380 "*Only* ignorance! *only ignorance!* how can you talk about *only* ignorance? Don't you know that it is the worst thing in the world, next to wickedness?—and which does the most mischief heaven only knows. If people can say, 'Oh! I did not know, 2385 I did not mean any harm,' they think it is all right. I suppose Martha Mulwash did not mean to kill that baby, when she dosed it with Dalby and soothing syrups; but she did kill it, and was tried for manslaughter." 2390

"And serve her right too," said Tom. "A

woman should not undertake to nurse a tender little child without knowing what is good and what is bad for it."

2395 "Bill Starkey," continued John, "did not mean to frighten his brother into fits, when he dressed up like a ghost, and ran after him in the moonlight, but he did; and that bright, handsome little fellow, that might have been the pride of
2400 any mother's heart, is just no better than an idiot, and never will be, if he live to be eighty years old. You were a good deal cut up yourself, Tom, two weeks ago, when those young ladies left your hothouse door open, with a frosty east wind blowing right in; you said it killed a good many of
2405 your plants."

"A good many!" said Tom; "there was not one of the tender cuttings that was not nipped off. I shall have to strike all over again, and the
2410 worst of it is, that I don't know where to go to get fresh ones. I was nearly mad when I came in and saw what was done."

"And yet," said John, "I am sure the young ladies did not mean it; it was only ignorance!"
2415 I heard no more of this conversation, for the medicine did well and sent me to sleep, and in the morning I felt much better; but I often thought of John's words when I came to know more of the world.

CHAPTER XX.

JOE GREEN

JOE GREEN went on very well. He learned ²⁴²⁰ quickly, and was so attentive and careful, that John began to trust him in many things; but, as I have said, he was small of his age, and it was seldom that he was allowed to exercise either Ginger or me. But it so happened one ²⁴²⁵ morning that John was out with "Justice" in the



"Flogging the two horses unmercifully"

luggage cart, and the master wanted a note to be taken immediately to a gentleman's house, about three miles distant, and sent his orders for Joe to saddle me and take it; adding the caution that ²⁴³⁰ he was to ride carefully.

The note was delivered, and we were quietly returning till we came to the brickfield. Here we saw a cart heavily laden with bricks; the
2435 wheels had stuck fast in the stiff mud of some deep ruts, and the carter was shouting and flogging the two horses unmercifully. Joe pulled up. It was a sad sight. There were the two horses straining and struggling with all their
2440 might to drag the cart out, but they could not move it; the sweat streamed from their legs and flanks, their sides heaved, and every muscle was strained, whilst the man, fiercely pulling at the head of the forehorse, swore and lashed most
2445 brutally.

"Hold hard," said Joe, "don't go on flogging the horses like that; the wheels are so stuck that they cannot move the cart." The man took no heed, but went on lashing.

2450 "Stop! pray stop," said Joe; "I'll help you to lighten the cart; they can't move it now."

"Mind your own business, you impudent young rascal, and I'll mind mine." The man was in a towering passion, and the worse for
2455 drink, and laid on the whip again. Joe turned my head, and the next moment we were going at a round gallop towards the house of the master brickmaker. I cannot say if John would have approved of our pace, but Joe and I were both of
2460 one mind, and so angry, that we could not have gone slower.

The house stood close by the roadside. Joe

knocked at the door and shouted, "Hulloa! is Mr. Clay at home?" The door was opened, and Mr. Clay himself came out.

2485

"Hulloa! young man, you seem in a hurry; any orders from the squire this morning?"

"No, Mr. Clay, but there's a fellow in your brickyard flogging two horses to death. I told him to stop and he wouldn't; I said I'd help him to lighten the cart, and he wouldn't; so I have come to tell you; pray, sir, go." Joe's voice shook with excitement.

2470

"Thank ye, my lad," said the man, running in for his hat; then pausing for a moment—"Will you give evidence of what you saw if I should bring the fellow up before a magistrate?"

2475

"That I will," said Joe, "and glad too." The man was gone, and we were on our way home at a smart trot.

2480

"Why, what's the matter with you, Joe? You look angry all over," said John, as the boy flung himself from the saddle.

"I am angry all over, I can tell you," said the boy, and then in hurried, excited words he told all that had happened. Joe was usually such a quiet, gentle little fellow that it was wonderful to see him so roused.

2485

"Right, Joe! you did right, my boy, whether the fellow gets a summons or not. Many folks would have ridden by and said 'twas not their business to interfere. Now, I say, that with cruelty and oppression it is everybody's business

2490

to interfere when they see it. You did right, my
2495 boy."

Joe was quite calm by this time, and proud that John approved of him, and he cleaned out my feet, and rubbed me down with a firmer hand than usual.

2500 They were just going home to dinner when the footman came down to the stable to say that Joe was wanted directly in master's private room; there was a man brought up for ill-using horses, and Joe's evidence was wanted. The boy flushed
2505 up to his forehead, and his eyes sparkled. "They shall have it," said he.

"Put yourself a bit straight," said John. Joe gave a pull at his necktie and a twitch at his jacket, and was off in a moment. Our master
2510 being one of the county magistrates, cases were often brought to him to settle, or say what should be done. In the stable we heard no more for some time, as it was the men's dinner hour, but when Joe came next into the stable I saw he was
2515 in high spirits. He gave me a good-natured slap and said, "We won't see such things done, will we, old fellow?" We heard afterwards that he had given his evidence so clearly, and the horses were in such an exhausted state, bearing marks
2520 of such brutal usage, that the carter was committed to take his trial, and might possibly be sentenced to two or three months in prison.

It was wonderful what a change had come over Joe. John laughed, and said he had grown

an inch taller in that week, and I believe he had. ²⁵²⁵
He was just as kind and gentle as before, but
there was more purpose and determination in all
that he did — as if he had jumped at once from a
boy into a man.



CHAPTER XXI.

THE PARTING

I HAD now lived in this happy place three years, but sad changes were about to come over us. We heard from time to time that our mistress was ill. The Doctor was often at the house, and the master looked grave and anxious. Then we heard that she must leave her home at once and go to a warm country for two or three years. The news fell upon the household like the tolling of a death-bell. Everybody was sorry; but the master began directly to make arrangements for breaking up his establishment and leaving England. We used to hear it talked about in our stable; indeed, nothing else was talked about.

John went about his work silent and sad, and Joe scarcely whistled. There was a great deal of coming and going; Ginger and I had full work.

The first of the party who went were Miss Jessie and Flora with their governess. They came to bid us good-by. They hugged poor Merrylegs like an old friend, and so indeed he was. Then we heard what had been arranged for us. Master had sold Ginger and me to his old friend, the Earl of W——, for he thought we

should have a good place there. Merrylegs he ²⁵⁵⁵ had given to the Vicar, who was wanting a pony for Mrs. Blomefield, but it was on the condition that he should never be sold, and when he was past work that he should be shot and buried.

Joe was engaged to take care of him, and to ²⁵⁶⁰ help in the house, so I thought that Merrylegs was well off. John had the offer of several good places, but he said he should wait a little and look round.

The evening before they left, the master came ²⁵⁶⁵ into the stable to give some directions and to give his horses the last pat. He seemed very low-spirited; I knew that by his voice. I believe we horses can tell more by the voice than many men can. ²⁵⁷⁰

"Have you decided what to do, John?" he said. "I find you have not accepted any of those offers."

"No, sir, I have made up my mind that if I could get a situation with some first-rate colt-²⁵⁷⁵ breaker and horse-trainer, that it would be the right thing for me. Many young animals are frightened and spoiled by wrong treatment which need not be, if the right man took them in hand. I always get on well with horses, and if I could ²⁵⁸⁰ help some of them to a fair start, I should feel as if I was doing some good. What do you think of it, sir?"

"I don't know a man anywhere," said master, "that I should think so suitable for it as yourself. ²⁵⁸⁵

You understand horses, and somehow they understand you, and in time you might set up for yourself. I think you could not do better. If in any way I can help you, write to me; I shall speak
2590 to my agent in London, and leave your character with him."

Master gave John the name and address, and then thanked him for his long and faithful service; but that was too much for John. "Pray
2595 don't, sir, I can't bear it; you and my dear mistress have done so much for me that I could never repay it; but we shall never forget you, sir, and please God we may some day see mistress back again like herself. We must keep up
2600 hope, sir." Master gave John his hand, but he did not speak, and they both left the stable.

The last sad day had come; the footman and the heavy luggage had gone off the day before, and there was only master and mistress and her
2605 maid. Ginger and I brought the carriage up to the Hall door for the last time. The servants brought out cushions and rugs and many other things, and when all were arranged, master came down the steps carrying the mistress in his arms
2610 (I was on the side next the house and could see all that went on). He placed her carefully in the carriage, while the house servants stood round crying.

"Good-by, again," he said, "we shall not forget
2615 any of you," and he got in—"Drive on, John."

Joe jumped up, and we trotted slowly through

the Park, and through the village, where the people were standing at their doors to have a last look and to say, "God bless them."

When we reached the railway station, I think ²⁶²⁰ mistress walked from the carriage to the waiting room. I heard her say in her own sweet voice, "Good-by, John, God bless you." I felt the rein twitch, but John made no answer, perhaps he could not speak. As soon as Joe had taken the ²⁶²⁵ things out of the carriage, John called him to stand by the horses, while he went on the platform. Poor Joe! he stood close up to our heads to hide his tears. Very soon the train came puffing up into the station; then two or three minutes, ²⁶³⁰ and the doors were slammed to; the guard whistled and the train glided away, leaving behind it only clouds of white smoke, and some very heavy hearts.

When it was quite out of sight, John came ²⁶³⁵ back—

"We shall never see her again," he said—"never." He took the reins, mounted the box, and with Joe drove slowly home; but it was not our home now.

2640



PART II.

CHAPTER XXII.

EARLSHALL

THE next morning after breakfast, Joe put Merrylegs into the mistress's low chaise to take him to the vicarage; he came first and said good-by to us, and Merrylegs neighed
2645 to us from the yard. Then John put the saddle on Ginger and the leading rein on me, and rode



"John rode us across country to Earls hall Park"

us across the country about fifteen miles to Earls hall Park, where the Earl of W—— lived. There was a very fine house and a great deal of stab-
2650 ling; we went into the yard through a stone gateway, and John asked for Mr. York. It was

some time before he came. He was a fine-looking, middle-aged man, and his voice said at once that he expected to be obeyed. He was very friendly and polite to John, and after giving us a slight look, he called a groom to take us to our boxes, and invited John to take some refreshment.

We were taken to a light airy stable, and placed in boxes adjoining each other, where we were rubbed down and fed. In about half-an-hour John and Mr. York, who was to be our new coachman, came in to see us.

"Now, Mr. Manly," he said, after carefully looking at us both, "I can see no fault in these horses, but we all know that horses have their peculiarities as well as men, and that sometimes they need different treatment; I should like to know if there is anything particular in either of these, that you would like to mention."

"Well," said John, "I don't believe there is a better pair of horses in the country, and right grieved I am to part with them, but they are not alike. The black one is the most perfect temper I ever knew; I suppose he has never known a hard word or a blow since he was foaled, and all his pleasure seems to be to do what you wish; but the chestnut I fancy must have had bad treatment; we heard as much from the dealer. She came to us snappish and suspicious, but when she found what sort of place ours was, it all went off by degrees; for three years I have never seen the smallest sign of temper. If she is well

treated there is not a better, more willing animal than she is; but she is naturally a more irritable
2685 constitution than the black horse; flies tease her more; anything wrong in the harness frets her more; and if she were ill-used or unfairly treated she would not be unlikely to give tit for tat; you know that many high-mettled horses will do so."

2690 "Of course," said York, "I quite understand, but you know it is not easy in stables like these to have all the grooms just what they should be; I do my best, and there I must leave it. I'll remember what you have said about the mare."

2695 They were going out of the stable, when John stopped and said, "I had better mention that we have never used the 'bearing rein' with either of them; the black horse never had one on, and the dealer said it was the gag-bit that spoiled the
2700 other's temper."

"Well," said York, "if they come here, they must wear the bearing rein. I prefer a loose rein myself, and his lordship is always very reasonable about horses; but my lady—that's
2705 another thing, she will have style; and if her carriage horses are not reined up tight, she wouldn't look at them. I always stand out against the gag-bit, and shall do so, but it must be tight up when my lady rides!"

2710 "I am sorry for it, very sorry," said John, "but I must go now, or I shall lose the train."

He came round to each of us to pat and speak to us for the last time; his voice sounded very sad.

I held my face close to him, that was all I could do to say good-by; and then he was gone,²⁷¹⁵ and I have never seen him since.

The next day Lord W—— came to look at us; he seemed pleased with our appearance.

"I have great confidence in these horses," he said, "from the character my friend Mr. Gordon²⁷²⁰ has given me of them. Of course they are not a match in color, but my idea is, that they will do very well for the carriage whilst we are in the country. Before we go to London I must try to match Baron; the black horse, I believe, is perfect for riding."²⁷²⁵

York then told him what John had said about us.

"Well," said he, "you must keep an eye to the mare, and put the bearing rein easy; I dare say²⁷³⁰ they will do very well with a little humoring at first. I'll mention it to her ladyship."

In the afternoon we were harnessed and put in the carriage, and as the stable clock struck three we were led round to the front of the house.²⁷³⁵ It was all very grand, and three or four times as large as the old house at Birtwick, but not half so pleasant, if a horse may have an opinion. Two footmen were standing ready, dressed in drab livery, with scarlet breeches and white stockings.²⁷⁴⁰ Presently we heard the rustling sound of silk as my lady came down the flight of stone steps. She stepped round to look at us. She was a tall, proud-looking woman, and did not seem pleased

2745 about something, but she said nothing, and got into the carriage. This was the first time of wearing a bearing rein, and I must say, though it certainly was a nuisance not to be able to get my head down now and then, it did not pull
2750 my head higher than I was accustomed to carry it. I felt anxious about Ginger, but she seemed to be quiet and content.

The next day at three o'clock we were again at the door, and the footmen as before; we heard
2755 the silk dress rustle, and the lady came down the steps, and in an imperious voice she said, "York, you must put those horses' heads higher, they are not fit to be seen."

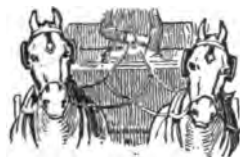
York got down and said very respectfully, "I
2760 beg your pardon, my lady, but these horses have not been reined up for three years, and my lord said it would be safer to bring them to it by degrees; but if your ladyship pleases, I can take them up a little more."

2765 "Do so," she said.

York came round to our heads and shortened the rein himself, one hole, I think; every little makes a difference, be it for better or worse, and that day we had a steep hill to go up. Then I
2770 began to understand what I had heard of. Of course I wanted to put my head forward and take the carriage up with a will, as we had been used to do; but no, I had to pull with my head up now, and that took all the spirit out of me, and
2775 the strain came on my back and legs. When we

came in, Ginger said, "Now you see what it is like, but this is not bad, and if it does not get much worse than this, I shall say nothing about it, for we are very well treated here; but if they strain me up tight, why, let 'em look out! I can't ²⁷³⁰ bear it, and I won't."

Day by day, hole by hole our bearing reins were shortened, and instead of looking forward with pleasure to having my harness put on as I used to do, I began to dread it. Ginger too ²⁷³⁵ seemed restless, though she said very little. At last I thought the worst was over; for several days there was no more shortening, and I determined to make the best of it and do my duty, though it was now a constant harass instead of a ²⁷⁴⁰ pleasure; but the worst was not come.



CHAPTER XXIII.

A STRIKE FOR LIBERTY

ONE day my lady came down later than usual and the silk rustled more than ever.

"Drive to the Duchess of B——'s," she
2795 said, and then after a pause—"Are you never going to get those horses' heads up, York? Raise them at once, and let us have no more of this humoring and nonsense."

York came to me first, whilst the groom stood
2800 at Ginger's head. He drew my head back and fixed the rein so tight that it was almost intolerable; then he went to Ginger, who was impatiently jerking her head up and down against the bit, as was her way now. She had a good
2805 idea of what was coming, and the moment York took the rein off the terret in order to shorten it, she took her opportunity, and reared up so suddenly, that York had his nose roughly hit, and his hat knocked off; the groom was
2810 nearly thrown off his legs. At once they both flew to her head, but she was a match for them, and went on plunging, rearing, and kicking in a most desperate manner; at last she kicked right over the carriage pole and fell down, after giving
2815 me a severe blow on my near quarter. There is no knowing what further mischief she might

have done, had not York promptly sat himself down flat on her head, to prevent her struggling, at the same time calling, out, "Unbuckle the black horse! run for the winch and unscrew the carriage pole; cut the trace here—somebody, if you can't unhitch it." One of the footmen ran



"She reared suddenly"

for the winch, and another brought a knife from the house. The groom soon set me free from Ginger and the carriage, and led me to my box. He just turned me in as I was, and ran back to York. I was much excited by what had happened, and if I had ever been used to kick or rear, I am sure I should have done it then; but I never had, and there I stood angry, sore in my leg, my head still strained up to the terret on the saddle, and no power to get it down. I was very miserable, and felt much inclined to kick the first person who came near me.

2635 Before long, however, Ginger was led in by two grooms, a good deal knocked about and bruised. York came with her and gave his orders, and then came to look at me. In a moment he let down my head.

2640 "Confound these bearing reins!" he said to himself; "I thought we should have some mischief soon—master will be sorely vexed; but there—if a woman's husband can't rule her, of course a servant can't; so I wash my hands of it, 2645 and if she can't get to the Duchess' garden party, I can't help it."

York did not say this before the men: he always spoke respectfully when they were by. Now, he felt me all over, and soon found the 2650 place above my hock where I had been kicked. It was swelled and painful; he ordered it to be sponged with hot water, and then some lotion was put on.

Lord W—— was much put out when he learned 2655 what had happened; he blamed York for giving way to his mistress, to which he replied, that in future he would much prefer to receive his orders only from his lordship; but I think nothing came of it, for things went on the same as before. I 2660 thought York might have stood up better for his horses, but perhaps I am no judge.

Ginger was never put into the carriage again, but when she was well of her bruises, one of Lord W——'s younger sons said he should like 2665 to have her; he was sure she would make a good

hunter. As for me, I was obliged still to go in the carriage, and had a fresh partner called Max; he had always been used to the tight rein. I asked him how it was he bore it.

"Well," he said, "I bear it because I must, but ²⁸⁷⁰ it is shortening my life, and it will shorten yours too, if you have to stick to it."

"Do you think," I said, "that our masters know how bad it is for us?"

"I can't say," he replied, "but the dealers and ²⁸⁷⁵ the horse doctors know it very well. I was at a dealer's once, who was training me and another horse to go as a pair; he was getting our heads up, as he said, a little higher and a little higher every day. A gentleman who was there asked ²⁸⁸⁰ him why he did so; 'Because,' said he, 'people won't buy them unless we do. The London people always want their horses to carry their heads high, and to step high; of course it is very bad for the horses, but then it is good for trade. ²⁸⁸⁵ The horses soon wear up, or get diseased, and they come for another pair.' That," said Max, "is what he said in my hearing, and you can judge for yourself."

What I suffered with that rein for four long ²⁸⁹⁰ months in my lady's carriage, it would be hard to describe; but I am quite sure that, had it lasted much longer, either my health or my temper would have given way. Before that, I never knew what it was to foam at the mouth, but now ²⁸⁹⁵ the action of the sharp bit on my tongue and

jaw, and the constrained position of my head and throat, always caused me to froth at the mouth more or less. Some people think it very
2800 fine to see this, and say, "What fine, spirited creatures!" But it is just as unnatural for horses as for men, to foam at the mouth; it is a sure sign of some discomfort, and should be attended to. Besides this, there was a pressure on my
2805 windpipe, which often made my breathing very uncomfortable; when I returned from my work, my neck and chest were strained and painful, my mouth and tongue tender, and I felt worn and depressed.

2910 In my old home, I always knew that John and my master were my friends; but here, although in many ways I was well treated, I had no friend. York might have known, and very likely did know, how that rein harassed me; but I suppose
2915 he took it as a matter of course that could not be helped; at any rate, nothing was done to relieve me.



CHAPTER XXIV.

THE LADY ANNE, OR A RUNAWAY HORSE

EARLY in the spring, Lord W—— and part of his family went up to London, and took York with them. I and Ginger and some ²⁹²⁰ other horses were left at home for use, and the head groom was left in charge.

The Lady Harriet, who remained at the Hall, was a great invalid, and never went out in the carriage, and the Lady Anne preferred riding on ²⁹²⁵ horseback with her brother, or cousins. She was a perfect horse-woman, and as gay and gentle as she was beautiful. She chose me for her horse, and named me "Black Auster." I enjoyed these rides very much in the clear cold air, sometimes ²⁹⁸⁰ with Ginger, sometimes with Lizzie. This Lizzie was a bright bay mare, almost thorough-bred, and a great favorite with the gentlemen, on account of her fine action and lively spirit; but Ginger, who knew more of her than I did, told ²⁹⁸⁵ me she was rather nervous.

There was a gentleman of the name of Blantyre staying at the Hall; he always rode Lizzie, and praised her so much, that one day Lady Anne ordered the side-saddle to be put on her, ²⁹⁴⁰ and the other saddle on me. When we came to the door, the gentleman seemed very uneasy.

"How is this?" he said, "are you tired of your good Black Auster?"

2945 "Oh! no, not at all," she replied, "but I am amiable enough to let you ride him for once, and I will try your charming Lizzie. You must confess that in size and appearance she is far more like a lady's horse than my own favorite."

2950 "Do let me advise you not to mount her," he said; "she is a charming creature, but she is too nervous for a lady. I assure you she is not perfectly safe; let me beg you to have the saddles changed."

2955 "My dear cousin," said Lady Anne, laughing, "pray do not trouble your good careful head about me. I have been a horse-woman ever since I was a baby, and I have followed the hounds a great many times, though I know you do not
2960 approve of ladies hunting; but still that is the fact, and I intend to try this Lizzie that you gentlemen are all so fond of. Please help me to mount like a good friend as you are."

There was no more to be said; he placed her
2965 carefully on the saddle, looked to the bit and curb, gave the reins gently into her hand, and then mounted me. Just as we were moving off, a footman came out with a slip of paper and message from the Lady Harriet—"Would they
2970 ask this question for her at Dr. Ashley's, and bring the answer?"

The village was about a mile off, and the Doctor's house was the last in it. We went along

gaily enough till we came to his gate. There was a short drive up to the house between tall ²⁹⁷⁵ evergreens. Blantyre alighted at the gate, and was going to open it for Lady Anne, but she said, "I will wait for you here, and you can hang Auster's rein on the gate."

He looked at her doubtfully—"I will not be ²⁹⁸⁰ five minutes," he said.

"Oh, do not hurry yourself; Lizzie and I shall not run away from you."

He hung my rein on one of the iron spikes, and was soon hidden amongst the trees. Lizzie ²⁹⁸⁵ was standing quietly by the side of the road a few paces off with her back to me. My young mistress was sitting easily with a loose rein, humming a little song. I listened to my rider's footsteps until they reached the house, and heard ²⁹⁹⁰ him knock at the door. There was a meadow on the opposite side of the road, the gate of which stood open; just then, some cart horses and several young colts came trotting out in a very disorderly manner, whilst a boy behind was ²⁹⁹⁵ cracking a great whip. The colts were wild and frolicsome, and one of them bolted across the road, and blundered up against Lizzie's hind legs; and whether it was the stupid colt, or the loud cracking of the whip, or both together, I cannot ³⁰⁰⁰ say, but she gave a violent kick, and dashed off into a headlong gallop. It was so sudden, that Lady Anne was nearly unseated, but she soon recovered herself. I gave a loud shrill neigh for

3005 help: again and again I neighed, pawing the ground impatiently, and tossing my head to get the rein loose. I had not long to wait. Blantyre came running to the gate; he looked anxiously about, and just caught sight of the flying figure, 3010 now far away on the road. In an instant he sprang to the saddle. I needed no whip, or spur, for I was as eager as my rider; he saw it, and giving me a free rein, and leaning a little forward, we dashed after them.

3015 For about a mile and a half the road ran straight, and then bent to the right, after which it divided into two roads. Long before we came



"To the right," cried the woman,

to the bend, she was out of sight. Which way had she turned? A woman was standing at her 3020 garden gate, shading her eyes with her hand, and looking eagerly up the road. Scarcely drawing the rein, Blantyre shouted, "Which way?" "To

the right," cried the woman, pointing with her hand, and away we went up the right-hand road; then for a moment we caught sight of her; ³⁰²⁵ another bend and she was hidden again. Several times we caught glimpses, and then lost them. We scarcely seemed to gain ground upon them at all. An old road-mender was standing near a heap of stones—his shovel dropped, and his ³⁰³⁰ hands raised. As we came near he made a sign to speak. Blantyre drew the rein a little. "To the common, to the common, sir; she has turned off there." I knew this common very well; it was for the most part very uneven ground, cov- ³⁰³⁵ ered with heather and dark green furze bushes, with here and there a scrubby old thorn tree; there were also open spaces of fine short grass, with ant-hills and mole turns everywhere; the worst place I ever knew for a headlong gallop. ³⁰⁴⁰

We had hardly turned on the common, when we caught sight again of the green habit flying on before us. My lady's hat was gone, and her long brown hair was streaming behind her. Her head and body were thrown back, as if she were ³⁰⁴⁵ pulling with all her remaining strength, and as if that strength were nearly exhausted. It was clear that the roughness of the ground had very much lessened Lizzie's speed, and there seemed a chance that we might overtake her. ³⁰⁵⁰

Whilst we were on the high road, Blantyre had given me my head; but now with a light hand and a practised eye, he guided me over the ground in

such a masterly manner, that my pace was scarcely
3065 slackened, and we were decidedly gaining on them.

About half way across the heath there had been a wide dyke recently cut, and the earth from the cutting was cast up roughly on the other side. Surely this would stop them! but no; with scarcely
3080 a pause Lizzie took the leap, stumbled among the rough clods, and fell. Blantyre groaned, "Now, Auster, do your best!" He gave me a steady rein, I gathered myself well together, and with one determined leap cleared both dyke and bank.

3085 Motionless among the heather, with her face to the earth, lay my poor young mistress. Blantyre kneeled down and called her name—there was no sound; gently he turned her face upward, it was ghastly white, and the eyes were closed.
3070 "Annie, dear Annie, do speak!" but there was no answer. He unbuttoned her habit, loosened her collar, felt her hands and wrists, then started up and looked wildly round him for help.

At no great distance there were two men
3075 cutting turf, who seeing Lizzie running wild without a rider had left their work to catch her.

Blantyre's halloo soon brought them to the spot. The foremost man seemed much troubled at the sight, and asked what he could do.

3080 "Can you ride?"

"Well, sir, I bean't much of a horseman, but I'd risk my neck for the Lady Anne; she was uncommon good to my wife in the winter."

"Then mount this horse, my friend; your neck

will be quite safe, and ride to the Doctor's and ⁸⁰⁸⁵ask him to come instantly—then on to the Hall—tell them all that you know, and bid them send me the carriage with Lady Anne's maid and help. I shall stay here."

"All right, sir, I'll do my best, and I pray God ⁸⁰⁹⁰the dear young lady may open her eyes soon." Then seeing the other man, he called out, "Here, Joe, run for some water, and tell my missis to come as quick as she can to the Lady Anne."

He then somehow scrambled into the saddle, ⁸⁰⁹⁵and with a "Gee up" and a clap on my sides with both his legs, he started on his journey, making a little circuit to avoid the dyke. He had no whip, which seemed to trouble him, but my pace soon cured that difficulty, and he found the best ⁸¹⁰⁰thing he could do was to stick to the saddle, and hold me in, which he did manfully. I shook him as little as I could help, but once or twice on the rough ground he called out, "Steady! Woah! Steady." On the high road we were all right; ⁸¹⁰⁵and at the Doctor's, and the Hall, he did his errand like a good man and true. They asked him in to take a drop of something. "No! no," he said, "I'll be back to 'em again by a short cut through the fields, and be there afore the ⁸¹¹⁰carriage."

There was a great deal of hurry and excitement after the news became known. I was just turned into my box, the saddle and bridle were taken off, and a cloth thrown over me.

Ginger was saddled and sent off in great haste for Lord George, and I soon heard the carriage roll out of the yard.

It seemed a long time before Ginger came
3120 back and before we were left alone; and then she told me all that she had seen.

"I can't tell much," she said; "we went a gallop nearly all the way, and got there just as the Doctor rode up. There was a woman sitting on
3125 the ground with the lady's head in her lap. The Doctor poured something into her mouth, but all that I heard was 'she is not dead.' Then I was led off by a man to a little distance. After awhile she was taken to the carriage, and we
3130 came home together. I heard my master say to a gentleman who stopped him to enquire, that he hoped no bones were broken, but that she had not spoken yet."

When Lord George took Ginger for hunting,
3135 York shook his head; he said it ought to be a steady hand to train a horse for the first season, and not a random rider like Lord George.

Ginger used to like it very much, but sometimes when she came back, I could see that she
3140 had been very much strained, and now and then she gave a short cough. She had too much spirit to complain, but I could not help feeling anxious about her.

Two days after the accident, Blantyre paid me
3145 a visit: he patted me and praised me very much; he told Lord George that he was sure the horse

knew of Annie's danger as well as he did. "I could not have held him in, if I would," said he; "she ought never to ride any other horse." I found by their conversation, that my young mistress was now out of danger, and would soon be able to ride again. This was good news to me, and I looked forward to a happy life.



CHAPTER XXV.

REUBEN SMITH

I MUST now say a little about Reuben Smith, who was left in charge of the stables when York went to London. No one more thoroughly understood his business than he did, and when he was all right, there could not be a more faithful or valuable man. He was gentle
3160 and very clever in his management of horses, and could doctor them almost as well as a farrier, for he had lived two years with a veterinary surgeon. He was a first-rate driver; he could take a four-in-hand, or a tandem, as easily as a
3165 pair. He was a handsome man, a good scholar, and had very pleasant manners. I believe everybody liked him; certainly the horses did; the only wonder was, that he should be in an under
3170 situation, and not in the place of a head coachman like York: but he had one great fault, and that was the love of drink. He was not like some men, always at it; he used to keep steady for weeks or months together; and then he would break out and have a "bout" of it, as
3175 York called it, and be a disgrace to himself, a terror to his wife, and a nuisance to all that had to do with him. He was, however, so useful, that two or three times York had hushed the matter

up, and kept it from the Earl's knowledge; but one night, when Reuben had to drive a party ³¹⁸⁰ home from a ball, he was so drunk that he could not hold the reins, and a gentleman of the party had to mount the box and drive the ladies home. Of course this could not be hidden, and Reuben was at once dismissed; his poor wife and little ³¹⁸⁵ children had to turn out of the pretty cottage by the Park gate and go where they could. Old Max told me all this, for it happened a good while ago; but shortly before Ginger and I came, Smith had been taken back again. York had ³¹⁹⁰ interceded for him with the Earl, who is very kind-hearted, and the man had promised faithfully that he would never taste another drop as long as he lived there. He had kept his promise so well that York thought he might be safely ³¹⁹⁵ trusted to fill his place whilst he was away, and he was so clever and honest, that no one else seemed so well fitted for it.

It was now early in April, and the family was expected home some time in May. The light ³²⁰⁰ brougham was to be fresh done up, and as Colonel Blantyre was obliged to return to his regiment, it was arranged that Smith should drive him to the town in it, and ride back. For this purpose, he took the saddle with him, and I was chosen for ³²⁰⁵ the journey. At the station the Colonel put some money into Smith's hand and bid him good-by, saying, "Take care of your young mistress, Reuben, and don't let Black Auster be hacked about

3210 by any random young prig that wants to ride him — keep him for the lady."

We left the carriage at the maker's, and Smith rode me to the White Lion, and ordered the ostler to feed me well and have me ready for him
3215 at four o'clock. A nail in one of my front shoes had started as I came along, but the ostler did not notice it till just about four o'clock. Smith did not come into the yard till five, and then he said he should not leave till six, as he had met with
3220 some old friends. The man then told him of the nail, and asked if he should have the shoe looked to.

"No," said Smith, "that will be all right till we get home."

3225 He spoke in a very loud, off-hand way, and I thought it very unlike him, not to see about the shoe, as he was generally wonderfully particular about loose nails in our shoes. He did not come at six, nor seven, nor eight, and it was nearly
3230 nine o'clock before he called for me, and then it was with a loud rough voice. He seemed in a very bad temper, and abused the ostler, though I could not tell what for.

The landlord stood at the door and said,
3235 "Have a care, Mr. Smith!" but he answered angrily with an oath; and almost before he was out of the town he began to gallop, frequently giving me a sharp cut with his whip, though I was going at full speed. The moon had not yet
3240 risen, and it was very dark. The roads were

stony, having been recently mended; going over them at this pace, my shoe became looser, and when we were near the turnpike gate it came off.

If Smith had been in his right senses, he would have been sensible of something wrong in ³²⁴⁵ my pace; but he was too madly drunk to notice anything.

Beyond the turnpike was a long piece of road, upon which fresh stones had just been laid; large sharp stones, over which no horse could be ³²⁵⁰



"Smith was flung off by my fall"

driven quickly without risk of danger. Over this road, with one shoe gone, I was forced to gallop at my utmost speed, my rider meanwhile cutting into me with his whip, and with wild curses urging me to go still faster. Of course ³²⁵⁵ my shoeless foot suffered dreadfully; the hoof was broken and split down to the very quick, and the inside was terribly cut by the sharpness of the stones.

3260 This could not go on; no horse could keep his footing under such circumstances, the pain was too great. I stumbled, and fell with violence on both my knees. Smith was flung off by my fall, and owing to the speed I was going at, he must
3265 have fallen with great force. I soon recovered my feet and limped to the side of the road, where it was free from stones. The moon had just risen above the hedge, and by its light I could see Smith lying a few yards beyond me. He did
3270 not rise, he made one slight effort to do so, and then, there was a heavy groan. I could have groaned too, for I was suffering intense pain both from my foot and knees; but horses are used to bear their pain in silence. I uttered no sound,
3275 but I stood there and listened. One more heavy groan from Smith; but though he now lay in the full moonlight, I could see no motion. I could do nothing for him nor myself, but oh! how I listened for the sound of horse, or wheels, or foot-
3280 steps. The road was not much frequented, and at this time of the night we might stay for hours before help came to us. I stood watching and listening. It was a calm sweet April night; there were no sounds, but a few low notes of a nightin-
3285 gale, and nothing moved but the white clouds near the moon, and a brown owl that flitted over the hedge. It made me think of the summer nights long ago, when I used to lie beside my mother in the green pleasant meadow at Farmer
3290 Grey's.

CHAPTER XXVI.

HOW IT ENDED

IT must have been nearly midnight, when I heard at a great distance the sound of a horse's feet. Sometimes the sound died away, then it grew clearer again and nearer. The road to Earlshall led through plantations ³²⁹⁵ that belonged to the Earl: the sound came in that direction, and I hoped it might be some one coming in search of us. As the sound came nearer and nearer, I was almost sure I could distinguish Ginger's step; a little nearer still, ³³⁰⁰ and I could tell she was in the dog-cart. I neighed loudly, and was overjoyed to hear an answering neigh from Ginger, and men's voices. They came slowly over the stones, and stopped at the dark figure that lay upon the ground ³³⁰⁵

One of the men jumped out, and stooped down over it. "It is Reuben!" he said, "and he does not stir."

The other man followed and bent over him. "He's dead," he said; "feel how cold his hands ³³¹⁰ are."

They raised him up, but there was no life, and his hair was soaked with blood. They laid him down again, and came and looked at me. They soon saw my cut knees. -3315

"Why, the horse has been down and thrown him! Who would have thought the black horse would have done that? Nobody thought he could fall. Reuben must have been lying here
3320 for hours! Odd, too, that the horse has not moved from the place."

Robert then attempted to lead me forward. I made a step, but almost fell again.

"Hallo! he's bad in his foot as well as his
3325 knees; look here—his hoof is cut all to pieces, he might well come down, poor fellow! I tell you what, Ned, I'm afraid it hasn't been all right with Reuben! Just think of him riding a horse over these stones without a shoe! Why, if he
3330 had been in his right senses, he would just as soon have tried to ride him over the moon. I'm afraid it has been the old thing over again. Poor Susan! she looked awfully pale when she came to my house to ask if he had not come home. She
3335 made believe she was not a bit anxious, and talked of a lot of things that might have kept him. But for all that, she begged me to go and meet him—but what must we do? There's the horse to get home as well as the body—and that.
3340 will be no easy matter."

Then followed a conversation between them, till it was agreed that Robert as the groom should lead me, and that Ned must take the body. It was a hard job to get it into the dog-cart, for there
3345 was no one to hold Ginger; but she knew as well as I did what was going on, and stood as still

as a stone. I noticed that, because, if she had a fault, it was that she was impatient in standing.

Ned started off very slowly with his sad load, and Robert came and looked at my foot again; ⁸³⁵⁰ then he took his handkerchief and bound it closely round, and so he led me home. I shall never forget that night walk; it was more than three miles. Robert led me on very slowly, and I limped and hobbled on as well as I could with ⁸³⁵⁵ great pain. I am sure he was sorry for me, for he often patted and encouraged me, talking to me in a pleasant voice.

At last I reached my own box, and had some corn, and after Robert had wrapped up my knees ⁸³⁶⁰ in wet cloths, he tied up my foot in a bran poultice to draw out the heat and cleanse it before the horse doctor saw it in the morning, and I managed to get myself down on the straw, and slept in spite of the pain. ⁸³⁶⁵

The next day, after the farrier had examined my wounds, he said he hoped the joint was not injured, and if so, I should not be spoiled for work, but I should never lose the blemish. I believe they did the best to make a good cure, ⁸³⁷⁰ but it was a long and painful one. Proud flesh, as they called it, came up in my knees, and was burnt out with caustic, and when at last it was healed, they put a blistering fluid over the front of both knees to bring all the hair off. They had ⁸³⁷⁵ some reason for this, and I suppose it was all right.

As Smith's death had been so sudden, and no one was there to see it, there was an inquest
3380 held. The landlord and ostler at the White Lion, with several other people, gave evidence that he was intoxicated when he started from the inn. The keeper of the tollgate said he rode at a hard gallop through the gate; and my shoe
3385 was picked up amongst the stones, so that the case was quite plain to them, and I was cleared of all blame.

Everybody pitied Susan; she was nearly out of her mind: she kept saying over and over
3390 again, "Oh! he was so good—so good! it was all that cursed drink; why will they sell that cursed drink? Oh, Reuben, Reuben!" So she went on till after he was buried; and then, as she had no home or relations, she, with her six little chil-
3395 dren, were obliged once more to leave the pleasant home by the tall oak trees, and go into that great gloomy Union House.



CHAPTER XXVII.

RUINED, AND GOING DOWN-HILL

AS soon as my knees were sufficiently healed, I was turned into a small meadow for a month or two; no other creature was ⁸⁴⁰⁰ there, and though I enjoyed the liberty and the sweet grass, yet I had been so long used to society that I felt very lonely. Ginger and I had become fast friends, and now I missed her company extremely. I often neighed when I heard ⁸⁴⁰⁵ horses' feet passing in the road, but I seldom got an answer; till one morning the gate was opened, and who should come in but dear old Ginger. The man slipped off her halter and left her there. With a joyful whinny I trotted up to ⁸⁴¹⁰ her; we were both glad to meet, but I soon found that it was not for our pleasure that she was brought to be with me. Her story would be too long to tell, but the end of it was that she had been ruined by hard riding, and was now ⁸⁴¹⁵ turned off to see what rest would do.

Lord George was young and would take no warning; he was a hard rider, and would hunt whenever he could get the chance, quite careless of his horse. Soon after I left the stable there ⁸⁴²⁰ was a steeplechase, and he determined to ride. Though the groom told him she was a little

strained, and was not fit for the race, he did not believe it, and on the day of the race, urged
8425 Ginger to keep up with the foremost riders. With her high spirit, she strained herself to the utmost; she came in with the first three horses, but her wind was touched, beside which, he was too heavy for her, and her back was strained;
8430 "And so," she said, "here we are—ruined in the prime of our youth and strength—you by a drunkard, and I by a fool: it is very hard." We



"We stood still and let them come up to us"

both felt in ourselves that we were not what we had been. However, that did not spoil the
8435 pleasure we had in each other's company; we did not gallop about as we once did, but we used to feed, and lie down together, and stand for hours under one of the shady lime trees with our heads close to each other; and so we passed our
8440 time till the family returned from town.

One day we saw the Earl come into the meadow, and York was with him. Seeing who it was we stood still under our lime tree, and let

them come up to us. They examined us carefully. The Earl seemed much annoyed. 3445

"There is three hundred pounds flung away for no earthly use," said he, "but what I care most for is, that these horses of my old friend, who thought they would find a good home with me, are ruined. The mare shall have a twelve-month's run, and we shall see what that will do for her; but the black one, he must be sold; 'tis a great pity, but I could not have knees like these in my stables."

"No, my lord, of course not," said York, "but 3455
he might get a place where appearance is not of much consequence, and still be well treated. I know a man in Bath, the master of some livery stables, who often wants a good horse at a low figure; I know he looks well after his horses. 3460
The inquest cleared the horse's character, and your lordship's recommendation, or mine, would be sufficient warrant for him."

"You had better write to him, York. I should be more particular about the place than the 3465
money he would fetch."

After this they left us.

"They'll soon take you away," said Ginger, "and I shall lose the only friend I have, and most likely we shall never see each other again. 3470
'Tis a hard world!"

About a week after this, Robert came into the field with a halter, which he slipped over my head, and led me away. There was no leave-

3475 taking of Ginger; we neighed to each other as I was led off, and she trotted anxiously along by the hedge, calling to me as long as she could hear the sound of my feet.

Through the recommendation of York, I was
3480 bought by the master of the livery stables. I had to go by train, which was new to me, and required a good deal of courage the first time; but as I found the puffing, rushing, whistling, and more than all, the trembling of the horse-
3485 box in which I stood did me no real harm, I soon took it quietly.

When I reached the end of my journey, I found myself in a tolerably comfortable stable and well attended to. These stables were not so
3490 airy and pleasant as those I had been used to. The stalls were laid on a slope instead of being level, and as my head was kept tied to the manger, I was obliged always to stand on the slope, which was very fatiguing. Men do not seem to
3495 know yet, that horses can do more work if they can stand comfortably and can turn about: however, I was well fed and well cleaned, and, on the whole, I think our master took as much care of us as he could. He kept a good many horses
3500 and carriages of different kinds, for hire. Sometimes his own men drove them; at others, the horse and chaise were let to gentlemen or ladies who drove themselves.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

A JOB HORSE AND HIS DRIVERS

HITHERTO I had always been driven by people who at least knew how to drive; ³⁵⁰⁵ but in this place I was to get my experience of all the different kinds of bad and ignorant driving to which we horses are subjected; for I was a "job-horse," and was let out to all sorts of people who wished to hire me; and as I was ³⁵¹⁰ good-tempered and gentle, I think I was oftener let out to the ignorant drivers, than some of the other horses, because I could be depended upon. It would take a long time to tell of all the different styles in which I was driven, but I will ³⁵¹⁵ mention a few of them.

First, there were the tight-rein drivers—men who seemed to think that all depended on holding the reins as hard as they could, never relaxing the pull on the horse's mouth, or giving him ³⁵²⁰ the least liberty of movement. They are always talking about "keeping the horse well in hand," and "holding a horse up," just as if a horse was not made to hold himself up.

Some poor broken-down horses, whose mouths ³⁵²⁵ have been made hard and insensible by just such drivers as these, may, perhaps, find some support in it; but for a horse who can depend upon his

own legs, and who has a tender mouth, and is
3530 easily guided, it is not only tormenting, but it is
stupid.

Then there are the loose-rein drivers, who let
the reins lie easily on our backs, and their own
hand rest lazily on their knees. Of course, such
3535 gentlemen have no control over a horse, if any-
thing happens suddenly. If a horse shies, or
starts, or stumbles, they are nowhere, and cannot
help the horse or themselves, till the mischief is
done. Of course, for myself, I had no objection
3540 to it, as I was not in the habit either of starting
or stumbling, and had only been used to depend
on my driver for guidance and encouragement;
still, one likes to feel the rein a little in going
down-hill, and likes to know that one's driver is
3545 not gone to sleep.

Besides, a slovenly way of driving gets a horse
into bad, and often lazy habits; and when he
changes hands, he has to be whipped out of them
with more or less pain and trouble. Squire Gor-
3550 don always kept us to our best paces, and our
best manners. He said that spoiling a horse,
and letting him get into bad habits, was just as
cruel as spoiling a child, and both had to suffer
for it afterwards.

3555 Besides, these drivers are often careless alto-
gether, and will attend to anything else rather
than their horses. I went out in the phaeton
one day with one of them; he had a lady, and
two children behind. He flopped the reins about

as we started, and of course, gave me several ³⁵⁶⁰ unmeaning cuts with the whip, though I was fairly off. There had been a good deal of road-mending going on, and even where the stones were not freshly laid down, there were a great many loose ones about. My driver was laughing ³⁵⁶⁵ and joking with the lady and the children, and talking about the country to the right and the left; but he never thought it worth while to keep an eye on his horse, or to drive on the smoothest parts of the road; and so it easily ³⁵⁷⁰ happened that I got a stone in one of my fore feet.

Now, if Mr. Gordon, or John, or in fact, any good driver had been there he would have seen that something was wrong, before I had gone ³⁵⁷⁵ three paces. Or even if it had been dark, a practised hand would have felt by the rein that there was something wrong in the step, and they would have got down and picked out the stone. But this man went on laughing and talking, ³⁵⁸⁰ whilst at every step the stone became more firmly wedged between my shoe and the frog of my foot. The stone was sharp on the inside and round on the outside, which, as every one knows, is the most dangerous kind that a horse can ³⁵⁸⁵ pick up; at the same time cutting his foot, and making him most liable to stumble and fall.

Whether the man was partly blind, or only very careless, I can't say; but he drove me with that stone in my foot for a good half-mile before ³⁵⁹⁰

he saw anything. By that time I was going so lame with the pain, that at last he saw it and called out, "Well, here's a go! Why, they have sent us out with a lame horse! What a shame!"

3595 He then chucked the reins and flipped about with the whip, saying, "Now, then, it's no use playing the old soldier with me; there's the



"A farmer came riding up on a brown cob"

journey to go, and it's no use turning lame and lazy."

3600 Just at this time a farmer came riding up on a brown cob; he lifted his hat and pulled up.

"I beg your pardon, sir," he said, "but I think there is something the matter with your horse, he goes very much as if he had a stone in his

shoe. If you will allow me, I will look at his ⁸⁶⁰⁵ feet; these loose scattered stones are confounded dangerous things for the horses."

"He's a hired horse," said my driver; "I don't know what's the matter with him, but it's a great shame to send out a lame beast like this." ⁸⁶¹⁰

The farmer dismounted, and slipping his rein over his arm, at once took up my near foot.

"Bless me, there's a stone! lame! I should think so!"

At first he tried to dislodge it with his hand, ⁸⁶¹⁵ but as it was now very tightly wedged, he drew a stone-pick out of his pocket, and very carefully, and with some trouble, got it out. Then holding it up, he said, "There, that's the stone your horse had picked up; it is a wonder he did not fall ⁸⁶²⁰ down and break his knees into the bargain!"

"Well, to be sure!" said my driver, "that is a queer thing! I never knew that horses picked up stones before."

"Didn't you?" said the farmer, rather con- ⁸⁶²⁵ temptuously; "but they do, though, and the best of them will do it, and can't help it sometimes on such roads as these. And if you don't want to lame your horse, you must look sharp and get them out quickly. This foot is very much ⁸⁶³⁰ bruised," he said, setting it gently down and patting me. "If I might advise, sir, you had better drive him gently for a while; the foot is a good deal hurt, and the lameness will not go off directly." ⁸⁶³⁵

Then mounting his cob and raising his hat to the lady, he trotted off.

When he was gone, my driver began to flop the reins about, and whip the harness, by which
3640 I understood that I was to go on, which of course I did, glad that the stone was gone, but still in a good deal of pain.

This was the sort of experience we job-horses often came in for.



CHAPTER XXIX.

COCKNEYS

THEN there is the steam-engine style of ³⁶⁴⁵ driving; these drivers were mostly people from towns, who never had a horse of their own, and generally traveled by rail.

They always seemed to think that a horse was something like a steam-engine, only smaller. ³⁶⁵⁰ At any rate, they think that if only they pay for it, a horse is bound to go just as far, and just as fast, and with just as heavy a load as they please. And be the roads heavy and muddy, or dry and good; be they stony or smooth, up-hill or down-hill, it is ³⁶⁵⁵ all the same—on, on, on, one must go at the same pace, with no relief, and no consideration.

These people never think of getting out to walk up a steep hill. Oh, no, they have paid to ride, and ride they will! The horse? Oh, he's ³⁶⁶⁰ used to it! What were horses made for, if not to drag people up-hill? Walk! A good joke indeed! And so the whip is applied and the rein is chucked, and often a rough scolding voice cries out, "Go along, you lazy beast!" And then ³⁶⁶⁵ another slash of the whip, when all the time we are doing our very best to get along, uncomplaining and obedient, though often sorely harassed and down-hearted.

3670 This steam-engine style of driving wears us up faster than any other kind. I would far rather go twenty miles with a good considerate driver, than I would go ten with some of these; it would take less out of me.

3675 Another thing—they scarcely ever put on the drag, however steep the down-hill may be, and thus bad accidents sometimes happen; or if they do put it on, they often forget to take it off at the bottom of the hill, and more than once, I
3680 have had to pull half-way up the next hill, with one of the wheels lodged fast in the drag-shoe before my driver chose to think about it; and that is a terrible strain on a horse.

Then these Cockneys, instead of starting at
3685 an easy pace as a gentleman would do, generally set off at full speed from the very stable yard; and when they want to stop, they first whip us and then pull up so suddenly, that we are nearly thrown on our haunches, and our mouths jagged
3690 with the bit. They call that pulling up with a dash! and when they turn a corner, they do it as sharply as if there were no right side or wrong side of the road.

I well remember one spring evening I and
3695 Rory had been out for the day. (Rory was the horse that mostly went with me when a pair was ordered, and a good honest fellow he was.) We had our own driver, and as he was always considerate and gentle with us, we had a very
3700 pleasant day. We were coming home at a good

smart pace about twilight ; our road turned sharp to the left ; but as we were close to the hedge on our own side, and there was plenty of room to pass, our driver did not pull us in. As we neared the corner I heard a horse and two wheels ⁸⁷⁰⁵ coming rapidly down the hill towards us. The hedge was high and I could see nothing, but the next moment we were upon each other. Happily for me, I was on the side next the hedge. Rory was on the right side of the pole, and had not ⁸⁷¹⁰ even a shaft to protect him. The man who was driving, was making straight for the corner, and when he came in sight of us he had no time to pull over to his own side. The whole shock came upon Rory. The gig shaft ran right into ⁸⁷¹⁵ the chest, making him stagger back with a cry that I shall never forget. The other horse was thrown upon his haunches, and one shaft broken. It turned out that it was a horse from our own stables, with the high-wheeled gig, that the ⁸⁷²⁰ young men were so fond of.

The driver was one of those random, ignorant fellows, who don't even know which is their own side of the road, or if they know, don't care. And there was poor Rory with his flesh torn ⁸⁷²⁵ open and bleeding, and the blood streaming down. They said if it had been a little more to one side, it would have killed him ; and a good thing for him, poor fellow, if it had.

As it was, it was a long time before the wound ⁸⁷³⁰ healed, and then he was sold for coal carting ; and

what that is, up and down those steep hills, only horses know. Some of the sights I saw there, where a horse had to come down-hill with a
8735 heavily-loaded two-wheel cart behind him, on which no drag could be placed, make me sad even now to think of.

After Rory was disabled, I often went in the carriage with a mare named Peggy, who stood in
8740 the next stall to mine. She was a strong, well-made animal, of a bright dun color, beautifully dappled, and with a dark-brown mane and tail. There was no high breeding about her, but she was very pretty, and remarkably sweet-tempered
8745 and willing. Still, there was an anxious look about her eye, by which I knew that she had some trouble. The first time we went out together I thought she had a very odd pace; she seemed to go partly in a trot, partly in a canter
8750 —three or four paces, and then to make a little jump forward.

It was very unpleasant for any horse who pulled with her, and made me quite fidgety. When we got home, I asked her what made her
8755 go in that odd, awkward way.

"Ah," she said in a troubled manner, "I know my paces are very bad, but what can I do? It really is not my fault, it is just because my legs are so short. I stand nearly as high as you, but
8760 your legs are a good three inches longer above your knees than mine, and of course you can take a much longer step, and go much faster. You

see I did not make myself; I wish I could have done so, I would have had long legs then; all my troubles come from my short legs," said Peggy, ⁸⁷⁶⁵ in a desponding tone.

"But how is it," I said, "when you are so strong, and good-tempered and willing?"

"Why you see," said she, "men will go so fast, and if one can't keep up to other horses, it ⁸⁷⁷⁰ is nothing but whip, whip, whip, all the time. And so I have had to keep up as I could, and have got into this ugly shuffling pace. It was not always so; when I lived with my first master I always went a good regular trot, but then he ⁸⁷⁷⁵ was not in such a hurry. He was a young clergyman in the country, and a good kind master he was. He had two churches a good way apart, and a great deal of work, but he never scolded or whipped me for not going ⁸⁷⁸⁰ faster. He was very fond of me. I only wish I was with him now; but he had to leave and go to a large town, and then I was sold to a farmer.

"Some farmers, you know, are capital masters; but I think this one was a low sort of man. He ⁸⁷⁸⁵ cared nothing about good horses, or good driving; he only cared for going fast. I went as fast as I could, but that would not do, and he was always whipping; so I got into this way of making a spring forward to keep up. On market nights ⁸⁷⁹⁰ he used to stay very late at the inn, and then drive home at a gallop.

"One dark night he was galloping home as

usual, when all on a sudden the wheel came
3795 against some great heavy thing in the road, and
turned the gig over in a minute. He was thrown
out and his arm broken, and some of his ribs, I
think. At any rate, it was the end of my living
with him, and I was not sorry. But you see it
3800 will be the same everywhere for me, if men *must*
go so fast. I wish my legs were longer!"

Poor Peggy! I was very sorry for her, and I
could not comfort her, for I knew how hard it



"She was sold to two ladies who drove themselves"

was upon slow-paced horses to be put with fast
3805 ones; all the whipping comes to their share, and
they can't help it.

She was often used in the phaeton, and was
very much liked by some of the ladies, because
she was so gentle; and some time after this she
3810 was sold to two ladies who drove themselves, and
wanted a safe good horse.

I met her several times out in the country,
going a good steady pace, and looking as gay and

contented as a horse could be. I was very glad to see her, for she deserved a good place. 3815

After she left us, another horse came in her stead. He was young, and had a bad name for shying and starting, by which he had lost a good place. I asked him what made him shy.

"Well, I hardly know," he said; "I was timid 3820 when I was young, and was a good deal frightened several times, and if I saw anything strange, I used to turn and look at it—you see, with our blinkers one can't see or understand what a thing is unless one looks round; and then my master always gave me a whipping, which of course made me start on, and did not make me less afraid. I think if he would have let me just look at things quietly, and see that there was nothing to hurt me, it would have been all right, 3830 and I should have got used to them. One day an old gentleman was riding with him, and a large piece of white paper or rag blew across just on one side of me; I shied and started forward—my master as usual whipped me smartly, 3835 but the old man cried out, 'You're wrong! you're wrong! you should never whip a horse for shying: he shies because he is frightened, and you only frighten him more, and make the habit worse.' So I suppose all men don't do so. I am 3840 sure I don't want to shy for the sake of it; but how should one know what is dangerous and what is not, if one is never allowed to get used to anything? I am never afraid of what I know.

3845 Now I was brought up in a park where there were deer; of course, I knew them as well as I did a sheep or a cow, but they are not common, and I know many sensible horses who are frightened at them, and who kick up quite a shindy before
3850 they will pass a paddock where there are deer."

I knew what my companion said was true, and I wished that every young horse had as good masters as Farmer Grey and Squire Gordon.

Of course we sometimes came in for good
3855 driving here. I remember one morning I was put into the light gig, and taken to a house in Pulteney Street. Two gentlemen came out; the taller of them came round to my head, he looked at the bit and bridle, and just shifted the collar
3860 with his hand, to see if it fitted comfortably.

"Do you consider this horse wants a curb?" he said to the ostler.

"Well," said the man, "I should say he would go just as well without, he has an uncommon
3865 good mouth, and though he has a fine spirit, he has no vice; but we generally find people like the curb."

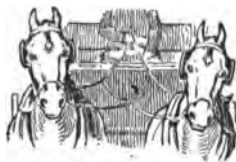
"I don't like it," said the gentleman: "be so good as to take it off, and put the rein in at the
3870 cheek; an easy mouth is a great thing on a long journey, is it not, old fellow?" he said, patting my neck.

Then he took the reins, and they both got up. I can remember now how quietly he turned me
3875 round, and then with a light feel of the rein, and

drawing the whip gently across my back, we were off.

I arched my neck and set off at my best pace. I found I had some one behind me who knew how a good horse ought to be driven. It seemed ³⁸⁹⁰ like old times again, and made me feel quite gay.

This gentleman took a great liking to me, and after trying me several times with the saddle, he prevailed upon my master to sell me to a friend of his, who wanted a safe pleasant horse for rid- ³⁸⁹⁵ ing. And so it came to pass that in the summer I was sold to Mr. Barry.



CHAPTER XXX.

A THIEF

MY new master was an unmarried man. He lived at Bath, and was much engaged in business. His doctor advised him to take horse exercise, and for this purpose he bought me. He hired a stable a short distance from his lodgings, and engaged a man named Filcher as groom. My master knew very little
3895 about horses, but he treated me well, and I should have had a good and easy place, but for circumstances of which he was ignorant. He ordered the best hay with plenty of oats, crushed beans, and bran, with vetches, or rye grass, as the man
3900 might think needful. I heard the master give the order, so I knew there was plenty of good food, and I thought I was well off.

For a few days all went on well; I found that my groom understood his business. He kept the
3905 stable clean and airy, and he groomed me thoroughly; and was never otherwise than gentle. He had been an ostler in one of the great hotels in Bath. He had given that up, and now cultivated fruit and vegetables for the market; and
3910 his wife bred and fattened poultry and rabbits for sale. After a while it seemed to me that my oats came very short; I had the beans, but bran was mixed with them instead of oats, of which

there were very few; certainly not more than a quarter of what there should have been. In ³⁹¹⁵ two or three weeks this began to tell upon my strength and spirits. The grass food, though very good, was not the thing to keep up my condition without corn. However, I could not complain, nor make known my wants. So it went ³⁹²⁰ on for about two months; and I wondered that my master did not see that something was the matter. However, one afternoon he rode out into the country to see a friend of his—a gentleman farmer, who lived on the road to Wells. ³⁹²⁵ This gentleman had a very quick eye for horses; and after he had welcomed his friend, he said, casting his eye over me,

“It seems to me, Barry, that your horse does not look so well as he did when you first had ³⁹³⁰ him; has he been well?”

“Yes, I believe so,” said my master, “but he is not nearly so lively as he was; my groom tells me that horses are always dull and weak in the autumn, and that I must expect it.” ³⁹³⁵

“Autumn! fiddlestick!” said the farmer; “why this is only August; and with your light work and good food he ought not to go down like this, even if it was autumn. How do you feed him?”

My master told him. The other shook his ³⁹⁴⁰ head slowly, and began to feel me over.

“I can’t say who eats your corn, my dear fellow, but I am much mistaken if your horse gets it. Have you ridden very fast?”



8945 "No! very gently."

"Then just put your hand here," said he, passing his hand over my neck and shoulder; he is as warm and damp as a horse just come up from grass. I advise you to look into your stable
8950 a little more. I hate to be suspicious, and, thank heaven, I have no cause to be, for I can trust my men, present or absent; but there are mean scoundrels, wicked enough to rob a dumb beast of his food; you must look into it." And turning
8955 to his man who had come to take me, "Give this horse a right good feed of bruised oats, and don't stint him."

"Dumb beasts!" yes, we are; but if I could have spoken, I could have told my master where
8960 his oats went to. My groom used to come every morning about six o'clock, and with him a little boy, who always had a covered basket with him. He used to go with his father into the harness room where the corn was kept, and I could see
8965 them when the door stood ajar, fill a little bag with oats out of the bin, and then he used to be off.

Five or six mornings after this, just as the boy had left the stable, the door was pushed open
8970 and a policeman walked in, holding the child tight by the arm; another policeman followed, and locked the door on the inside, saying, "Show me the place where your father keeps his rabbits' food."

8975 The boy looked very frightened and began to

cry; but there was no escape, and he led the way to the corn-bin. Here the policeman found another empty bag like that which was found full of oats in the boy's basket.

Filcher was cleaning my feet at the time, but ³⁹⁸⁰ they soon saw him, and though he blustered a good deal, they walked him off to the "lock-up," and his boy with him. I heard afterwards that the boy was not held to be guilty, but the man was sentenced to prison for two months. ³⁹⁸⁵



CHAPTER XXXI.

A HUMBUG

MY master was not immediately suited, but in a few days my new groom came. He was a tall, good-looking fellow enough; but if ever there was a humbug in the shape of a groom, Alfred Smirk was the man. He was very civil to me, and never



"Alfred Smirk considered himself very handsome"

used me ill; in fact, he did a great deal of stroking and patting, when his master was there to see it. He always brushed my mane and tail with water, and my hoofs with oil before he brought me to the door, to make me look smart; but as to cleaning my feet, or looking to my shoes, or grooming me thoroughly, he thought no more of that than if I had been a

cow. He left my bit rusty, my saddle damp, 4000
and my crupper stiff.

Alfred Smirk considered himself very handsome; he spent a great deal of time about his hair, whiskers, and necktie, before a little looking-glass in the harness room. When his master 4005
was speaking to him, it was always, "Yes, sir; yes, sir"; touching his hat at every word; and every one thought he was a very nice young man, and that Mr. Barry was very fortunate to meet with him. I should say he was the 4010
laziest, most conceited fellow I ever came near. Of course it was a great thing not to be ill-used, but then a horse wants more than that. I had a loose box, and might have been very comfortable if he had not been too indolent to 4015
clean it out. He never took all the straw away, and the smell from what lay underneath was very bad; while the strong vapors that rose up made my eyes smart and inflame, and I did not feel the same appetite for my food. 4020

One day his master came in and said, "Alfred, the stable smells rather strong; should not you give that stall a good scrub, and throw down plenty of water?"

"Well, sir," he said, touching his cap, "I'll do 4025
so if you please, sir, but it is rather dangerous, sir, throwing down water in a horse's box; they are very apt to take cold, sir. I should not like to do him an injury, but I'll do it if you please, sir." 4030

"Well," said his master, "I should not like him to take cold, but I don't like the smell of this stable; do you think the drains are all right?"

4035 "Well, sir, now you mention it, I think the drain does sometimes send back a smell; there may be something wrong, sir."

"Then send for the bricklayer and have it seen to," said his master.

4040 "Yes, sir, I will."

The bricklayer came and pulled up a great many bricks, and found nothing amiss; so he put down some lime and charged the master five shillings, and the smell in my box was as bad as
4045 ever: but that was not all—standing as I did on a quantity of moist straw, my feet grew unhealthy and tender, and the master used to say,

"I don't know what is the matter with this
4050 horse, he goes very fumble-footed. I am sometimes afraid he will stumble."

"Yes, sir," said Alfred, "I have noticed the same myself, when I have exercised him."

Now the fact was, that he hardly ever did
4055 exercise me, and when the master was busy, I often stood for days together without stretching my legs at all, and yet being fed just as high as if I were at hard work. This often disordered my health, and made me sometimes heavy and
4060 dull, but more often restless and feverish. He never even gave me a meal of green meat, or a

bran mash, which would have cooled me, for he was altogether as ignorant as he was conceited; and then, instead of exercise or change of food, I had to take horse balls and draughts; which, ⁴⁰⁶⁵ beside the nuisance of having them poured down my throat, used to make me feel ill and uncomfortable.

One day my feet were so tender, that trotting over some fresh stones with my master on my ⁴⁰⁷⁰ back, I made two such serious stumbles, that as he came down Lansdown into the city, he stopped at the farrier's, and asked him to see what was the matter with me. The man took up my feet one by one and examined them; then ⁴⁰⁷⁵ standing up and dusting his hands one against the other, he said —

"Your horse has got the 'thrush,' and badly too; his feet are very tender; it is fortunate that he has not been down. I wonder your groom ⁴⁰⁸⁰ has not seen to it before. This is the sort of thing we find in foul stables, where the litter is never properly cleared out. If you will send him here to-morrow, I will attend to the hoof, and I will direct your man how to apply the lini- ⁴⁰⁸⁵ ment which I will give him."

The next day I had my feet thoroughly cleansed and stuffed with tow, soaked in some strong lotion; and a very unpleasant business it was. 4090

The farrier ordered all the litter to be taken out of my box day by day, and the floor kept

very clean. Then I was to have bran mashes, a little green meat, and not so much corn, till my
4085 feet were well again. With this treatment I soon regained my spirits, but Mr. Barry was so much disgusted at being twice deceived by his grooms, that he determined to give up keeping a horse, and to hire when he wanted one. I was
4100 therefore kept till my feet were quite sound, and was then sold again.



PART III.

CHAPTER XXXII.

A HORSE FAIR

NO doubt a horse fair is a very amusing place to those who have nothing to lose; at any rate, there is plenty to see.

Long strings of young horses out of the ⁴¹⁰⁸ country, fresh from the marshes; and droves of shaggy little Welsh ponies, no higher than Mer-rylegs; and hundreds of cart horses of all sorts, some of them with their long tails braided up, and tied with scarlet cord; and a good many ⁴¹¹⁰ like myself, handsome and high-bred, but fallen into the middle class through some accident or blemish, unsoundness of wind, or some other complaint. There were some splendid animals quite in their prime, and fit for anything; they ⁴¹¹⁵ were throwing out their legs and showing off their paces in high style, as they were trotted out with a leading rein, the groom running by the side. But round in the background there were a number of poor things, sadly broken ⁴¹²⁰ down with hard work; with their knees knuckling over, and their hind legs swinging out at every step; and there were some very dejected-looking old horses, with the under lip hanging

4125 down, and the ears laying back heavily, as if there was no more pleasure in life, and no more hope. There were some so thin you might see all their ribs, and some with old sores on their backs and hips; these were sad sights for a horse to
4130 look upon, who knows not but he may come to the same state.

There was a great deal of bargaining; of running up and beating down, and if a horse may speak his mind so far as he understands, I
4135 should say, there were more lies told, and more trickery at that horse fair, than a clever man could give an account of. I was put with two or three other strong, useful-looking horses, and a good many people came to look at us. The
4140 gentlemen always turned from me when they saw my broken knees; though the man who had me swore it was only a slip in the stall.

The first thing was to pull my mouth open, then to look at my eyes, then feel all the way
4145 down my legs, and give me a hard feel of the skin and flesh, and then try my paces. It was wonderful what a difference there was in the way these things were done. Some did it in a rough off-hand way, as if one was only a piece
4150 of wood; while others would take their hands gently over one's body, with a pat now and then, as much as to say, "by your leave." Of course I judged a good deal of the buyers by their manners to myself.

4155 There was one man, I thought, if he would

buy me, I should be happy. He was not a gentleman, nor yet one of the loud flashy sort that called themselves so. He was rather a small man but well made, and quick in all his motions. I knew in a moment by the way he handled me, ⁴¹⁶⁰ that he was used to horses; he spoke gently, and his gray eye had a kindly, cheery look in it. It may seem strange to say—but it is true all the



"'Well, old chap,' he said, 'I think we should suit each other'"

same—that the clean fresh smell there was about him made me take to him; no smell of old ⁴¹⁶⁵ beer and tobacco, which I hated, but a fresh smell as if he had come out of a hayloft. He offered twenty-three pounds for me; but that was refused, and he walked away. I looked after him, but he was gone, and a very hard-looking, ⁴¹⁷⁰ loud-voiced man came; I was dreadfully afraid he would have me; but he walked off. One or two more came who did not mean business. Then the hard-faced man came back again and

4175 offered twenty-three pounds. A very close bargain was being driven; for my salesman began to think he should not get all he asked, and must come down; but just then the gray-eyed man came back again. I could not help reaching out
4180 my head towards him. He stroked my face kindly.

"Well, old chap," he said, "I think we should suit each other. I'll give twenty-four for him."

"Say twenty-five and you shall have him."

4185 "Twenty-four ten," said my friend, in a very decided tone, "and not another sixpence—yes or no?"

"Done," said the salesman, "and you may depend upon it, there's a monstrous deal of quality
4190 in that horse, and if you want him for cab-work, he's a bargain."

The money was paid on the spot, and my new master took my halter, and led me out of the fair to an inn, where he had a saddle and bridle
4195 ready. He gave me a good feed of oats, and stood by whilst I ate it, talking to himself, and talking to me. Half-an-hour after we were on our way to London, through pleasant lanes and country roads, until we came into the great
4200 London thoroughfare, on which we traveled steadily, till in the twilight, we reached the great city. The gas lamps were already lighted; there were streets to the right, and streets to the left, and streets crossing each other for mile
4205 upon mile. I thought we should never come to

the end of them. At last, in passing through one, we came to a long cab stand, when my rider called out in a cheery voice, "Good-night, Governor!"

"Halloo!" cried a voice, "have you got a good one?"

"I think so," replied my owner.

"I wish you luck with him."

"Thank ye, Governor," and he rode on. We soon turned up one of the side streets, and about half way up that, we turned into a very narrow street, with rather poor-looking houses on one side, and what seemed to be coach-houses and stables on the other.

My owner pulled up at one of the houses and whistled. The door flew open, and a young woman, followed by a little girl and boy, ran out. There was a very lively greeting as my rider dismounted.

"Now then, Harry, my boy, open the gates, and mother will bring us the lantern."

The next minute they were all standing round me in a small stable yard.

"Is he gentle, father?"

"Yes, Dolly, as gentle as your own kitten; come and pat him."

At once the little hand was patting about all over my shoulder without fear. How good it felt!

"Let me get him a bran mash while you rub him down," said the mother.

"Do, Polly, it's just what he wants, and I know you've got a beautiful mash ready for me."

"Sausage dumpling and apple turnover,"
4240 shouted the boy, which set them all laughing. I was led into a comfortable clean-smelling stall with plenty of dry straw, and after a capital supper, I lay down, thinking I was going to be happy.



CHAPTER XXXIII.

A LONDON CAB HORSE

MY new master's name was Jeremiah Barker, ⁴²⁴ but as every one called him Jerry, I shall do the same. Polly, his wife, was just as good a match as a man could have. She was a plump, trim, tidy little woman, with smooth dark hair, dark eyes, and a merry little mouth. The ⁴²⁵ boy was nearly twelve years old; a tall, frank, good-tempered lad; and little Dorothy (Dolly they called her) was her mother over again, at eight years old. They were all wonderfully fond of each other; I never knew such a happy, merry ⁴²⁶ family before, or since. Jerry had a cab of his own, and two horses, which he drove and attended to himself. His other horse was a tall, white, rather large-boned animal, called Captain; he was old now, but when he was young he must ⁴²⁷ have been splendid; he had still a proud way of holding his head, and arching his neck; in fact, he was a high-bred, fine-mannered, noble old horse, every inch of him. He told me that in his early youth he went to the Crimean War; he ⁴²⁸ belonged to an officer in the Cavalry, and used to lead the regiment. I will tell more of that hereafter.

The next morning, when I was well groomed,

4270 Polly and Dolly came into the yard to see me, and make friends. Harry had been helping his father since the early morning, and had stated his opinion that I should turn out "a regular brick." Polly brought me a slice of apple, and
4275 Dolly a piece of bread, and made as much of me as if I had been the "Black Beauty" of olden time. It was a great treat to be petted again, and talked to in a gentle voice, and I let them see as well as I could that I wished to be friendly. Polly
4280 thought I was very handsome, and a great deal too good for a cab, if it was not for the broken knees.

"Of course, there's no one to tell us whose fault that was," said Jerry, "and as long as I don't know, I shall give him the benefit of the
4285 doubt; for a firmer, neater stepper I never rode; we'll call him 'Jack,' after the old one—shall we, Polly?"

"Do," she said, "for I like to keep a good name going."

4290 Captain went out in the cab all the morning. Harry came in after school to feed me and give me water. In the afternoon I was put into the cab. Jerry took as much pains to see if the collar and bridle fitted comfortably, as if he had been
4295 John Manly over again. When the crupper was let out a hole or two, it all fitted well. There was no bearing rein—no curb—nothing but a plain ring snaffle. What a blessing that was!

After driving through the side street we came
4300 to the large cab stand where Jerry had said

"Good-night." On one side of this wide street were high houses with wonderful shop fronts, and on the other, was an old church and churchyard, surrounded by iron palisades. Alongside these iron rails a number of cabs were drawn up, waiting for passengers: bits of hay were lying about on the ground; some of the men were standing together talking; some were sitting on their



"He was a jolly-looking fellow"

boxes reading the newspaper; and one or two were feeding their horses with bits of hay, and a drink of water. We pulled up in the rank at the back of the last cab. Two or three men came round and began to look at me and pass their remarks.

"Very good for a funeral," said one

4815

"Too smart-looking," said another, shaking his head in a very wise way; "you'll find out

something wrong one of these fine mornings, or my name isn't Jones."

4320 "Well," said Jerry pleasantly, "I suppose I need not find it out till it finds me out; eh? and if so, I'll keep up my spirits a little longer."

Then came up a broad-faced man, dressed in a great gray coat with great gray capes, and
4325 great white buttons, a gray hat, and a blue comforter loosely tied round his neck; his hair was gray too, but he was a jolly-looking fellow, and the other men made way for him. He looked me all over, as if he had been going to buy me;
4330 and then straightening himself up with a grunt, he said, "He's the right sort for you, Jerry; I don't care what you gave for him, he'll be worth it." Thus my character was established on the stand.

4335 This man's name was Grant, but he was called "Gray Grant," or "Governor Grant." He had been the longest on that stand of any of the men, and he took it upon himself to settle matters, and stop disputes. He was generally a
4340 good-humored, sensible man; but if his temper was a little out, as it was sometimes, when he had drunk too much, nobody liked to come too near his fist, for he could deal a very heavy blow.

The first week of my life as a cab horse was
4345 very trying; I had never been used to London, and the noise, the hurry, the crowds of horses, carts, and carriages, that I had to make my way through, made me feel anxious and harassed;

but I soon found that I could perfectly trust my driver, and then I made myself easy and got ⁴³⁶⁰ used to it.

Jerry was as good a driver as I had ever known; and what was better, he took as much thought for his horses as he did for himself. He soon found out that I was willing to work, and ⁴³⁶⁵ do my best; and he never laid the whip on me, unless it was gently drawing the end of it over my back, when I was to go on; but generally I knew this quite well by the way in which he took up the reins; and I believe his whip was ⁴³⁷⁰ more frequently stuck up by his side than in his hand.

In a short time I and my master understood each other, as well as horse and man can do. In the stable, too, he did all that he could for ⁴³⁶⁵ our comfort. The stalls were the old-fashioned style, too much on the slope; but he had two movable bars fixed across the back of our stalls, so that at night, and when we were resting, he just took off our halters, and put up the bars, ⁴³⁷⁰ and thus we could turn about and stand whichever way we pleased, which is a great comfort.

Jerry kept us very clean, and gave us as much change of food as he could, and always plenty of it; and not only that, but he always gave us ⁴³⁷⁵ plenty of clean fresh water, which he allowed to stand by us both night and day, except of course when we came in warm. Some people say that a horse ought not to drink all he likes; but I

4880 know if we are allowed to drink when we want it, we drink only a little at a time, and it does us a great deal more good than swallowing down half a bucket full at a time, because we have been left without till we are thirsty and
4385 miserable. Some grooms will go home to their beer and leave us for hours with our dry hay and oats and nothing to moisten them; then of course we gulp down too much at once, which helps to spoil our breathing and sometimes chills
4390 our stomachs. But the best thing that we had here was our Sundays for rest; we worked so hard in the week, that I do not think we could have kept up to it, but for that day; besides, we had then time to enjoy each other's company.
4395 It was on these days that I learned my companion's history.



CHAPTER XXXIV.

AN OLD WAR HORSE

CAPTAIN had been broken in and trained for an army horse; his first owner was an officer of cavalry going out to the Crimean War. He said he quite enjoyed the training⁴⁴⁰⁰ with all the other horses, trotting together, turning together, to the right hand or to the left, halting at the word of command, or dashing forward at full speed at the sound of the trumpet, or signal of the officer. He was, when young,⁴⁴⁰⁵ a dark, dappled iron gray, and considered very handsome. His master, a young, high-spirited gentleman, was very fond of him, and treated him from the first with the greatest care and kindness. He told me he thought the life of an⁴⁴¹⁰ army horse was very pleasant; but when it came to being sent abroad, over the sea in a great ship, he almost changed his mind.

"That part of it," said he, "was dreadful! Of course we could not walk off the land into the⁴⁴¹⁵ ship; so they were obliged to put strong straps under our bodies, and then we were lifted off our legs in spite of our struggles, and were swung through the air over the water, to the deck of the great vessel. There we were placed⁴⁴²⁰ in small close stalls, and never for a long time

saw the sky, or were able to stretch our legs. The ship sometimes rolled about in high winds, and we were knocked about, and felt bad enough.

4425 However, at last it came to an end, and we were hauled up, and swung over again to the land; we were very glad, and snorted, and neighed for joy, when we once more felt firm ground under our feet.

4430 We soon found that the country we had come to was very different to our own, and that we had many hardships to endure besides the fighting; but many of the men were so fond of their horses, that they did everything they could to
4435 make them comfortable, in spite of snow, wet, and all things out of order."

"But what about the fighting?" said I; "was not that worse than anything else?"

"Well," said he, "I hardly know; we always
4440 liked to hear the trumpet sound, and to be called out, and were impatient to start off, though sometimes we had to stand for hours, waiting for the word of command; and when the word was given, we used to spring forward as gaily and eagerly
4445 as if there were no cannon balls, bayonets, or bullets. I believe so long as we felt our rider firm in the saddle, and his hand steady on the bridle, not one of us gave way to fear, not even when the terrible bombshells whirled through
4450 the air and burst into a thousand pieces.

"I, with my noble master, went into many actions together without a wound; and though

I saw horses shot down with bullets, pierced through with lances, and gashed with fearful sabre-cuts; though we left them dead on the field, ⁴⁴⁵⁵ or dying in the agony of their wounds, I don't think I feared for myself. My master's cheery voice, as he encouraged his men, made me feel as if he and I could not be killed. I had such perfect trust in him, that whilst he was guiding ⁴⁴⁶⁰ me, I was ready to charge up to the very cannon's mouth. I saw many brave men cut down, many fall mortally wounded from their saddles. I had heard the cries and groans of the dying, I had cantered over ground slippery with blood, and ⁴⁴⁶⁵ frequently had to turn aside to avoid trampling on wounded man or horse, but, until one dreadful day, I had never felt terror; that day I shall never forget."

Here old Captain paused for a while and drew ⁴⁴⁷⁰ a long breath; I waited, and he went on.

"It was one autumn morning, and as usual, an hour before daybreak our cavalry had turned out, ready caparisoned for the day's work, whether it might be fighting or waiting. The men stood ⁴⁴⁷⁵ by their horses waiting, ready for orders. As the light increased, there seemed to be some excitement among the officers; and before the day was well begun, we heard the firing of the enemy's guns. 4480

"Then one of the officers rode up and gave the word for the men to mount, and in a second, every man was in his saddle, and every horse

stood expecting the touch of the rein, or the
4485 pressure of his rider's heels, all animated, all
eager; but still we had been trained so well, that,
except by the champing of our bits, and the
restive tossing of our heads from time to time, it
could not be said that we stirred.

4490 "My dear master and I were at the head of the
line, and as all sat motionless and watchful, he
took a little stray lock of my mane which had
turned over on the wrong side, laid it over on the
right, and smoothed it down with his hand; then
4495 patting my neck, he said, 'We shall have a day of
it to-day, Bayard, my beauty; but we'll do our
duty as we have done.' He stroked my neck that
morning, more, I think, than he had ever done
before; quietly on and on, as if he were thinking
4500 of something else. I loved to feel his hand
on my neck, and arched my crest proudly and
happily; but I stood very still, for I knew all his
moods, and when he liked me to be quiet, and
when gay.

4505 "I cannot tell all that happened on that day,
but I will tell you of the last charge that we
made together; it was across a valley right in
front of the enemy's cannon. By this time we
were well used to the roar of heavy guns, the
4510 rattle of musket fire, and the flying of shot near
us; but never had I been under such a fire as we
rode through on that day. From the right, from
the left, and from the front, shot and shell poured
in upon us. Many a brave man went down,

many a horse fell, flinging his rider to the earth; ⁴⁵¹⁵
many a horse without a rider ran wildly out of
the ranks: then terrified at being alone with no
hand to guide him, came pressing in amongst
his old companions, to gallop with them to the
charge. ⁴⁵²⁰

"Fearful as it was, no one stopped, no one
turned back. Every moment the ranks were
thinned, but as our comrades fell, we closed in
to keep them together; and instead of being
shaken or staggered in our pace, our gallop ⁴⁵²⁵
became faster and faster as we neared the cannon,
all clouded in white smoke, while the red fire
flashed through it.

"My master, my dear master was cheering on
his comrades with his right arm raised on high, ⁴⁵³⁰
when one of the balls, whizzing close to my head,
struck him. I felt him stagger with the shock,
though he uttered no cry; I tried to check my
speed, but the sword dropped from his right
hand, the rein fell loose from the left, and sinking ⁴⁵³⁵
backward from the saddle he fell to the earth;
the other riders swept past us, and by the force
of their charge I was driven from the spot where
he fell.

"I wanted to keep my place by his side, and ⁴⁵⁴⁰
not leave him under that rush of horses' feet,
but it was in vain; and now, without a master or
a friend, I was alone on that great slaughter
ground; then fear took hold on me, and I trem-
bled as I had never trembled before; and I too, ⁴⁵⁴⁵

as I had seen other horses do, tried to join in the ranks and gallop with them; but I was beaten off by the swords of the soldiers. Just then, a soldier whose horse had been killed under him, 4550 caught at my bridle and mounted me; and with this new master I was again going forward: but our gallant company was cruelly overpowered, and those who remained alive after the fierce fight for the guns, came galloping back over the 4555 same ground. Some of the horses had been so badly wounded that they could scarcely move from the loss of blood; other noble creatures were trying on three legs to drag themselves along, and others were struggling to rise on 4560 their fore feet, when their hind legs had been shattered by shot. Their groans were piteous to hear, and the beseeching look in their eyes as those who escaped passed by, and left them to their fate, I shall never forget. After the battle 4565 the wounded men were brought in, and the dead were buried."

"And what about the wounded horses?" I said; "were they left to die?"

"No, the army farriers went over the field 4570 with their pistols, and shot all that were ruined; some that had only slight wounds were brought back and attended to, but the greater part of the noble willing creatures that went out that morning never came back! In our stables there was 4575 only about one in four that returned.

"I never saw my dear master again. I believe

he fell dead from the saddle. I never loved any other master so well. I went into many other engagements, but was only once wounded, and then not seriously; and when the war was over,⁴⁵⁸⁰ I came back again to England, as sound and strong as when I went out."

I said, "I have heard people talk about war as if it was a very fine thing."

"Ah!" said he, "I should think they never⁴⁵⁸⁵ saw it. No doubt it is very fine when there is no enemy, when it is just exercise and parade, and sham-fight. Yes, it is very fine then; but when thousands of good brave men and horses are killed, or crippled for life, it has a very differ-⁴⁵⁹⁰ent look."

"Do you know what they fought about?" said I.

"No," he said, "that is more than a horse can understand, but the enemy must have been⁴⁵⁹⁵ awfully wicked people, if it was right to go all that way over the sea on purpose to kill them."



CHAPTER XXXV.

JERRY BARKER

I NEVER knew a better man than my new master; he was kind and good, and as strong for the right as John Manly; and so good-tempered and merry, that very few people could pick a quarrel with him. He was very fond of making little songs, and singing them to himself. One, he was very fond of, was this—

4605

“Come, father and mother,
And sister and brother,
Come, all of you, turn to
And help one another.”

And so they did; Harry was as clever at
4610 stable-work as a much older boy, and always wanted to do what he could. Then Polly and Dolly used to come in the morning to help with the cab—to brush and beat the cushions, and rub the glass, while Jerry was giving us a cleaning
4615 in the yard, and Harry was rubbing the harness.

There used to be a great deal of laughing and fun between them, and it put Captain and me in much better spirits than if we had heard scolding and hard words. They were always early in the
4620 morning, for Jerry would say—

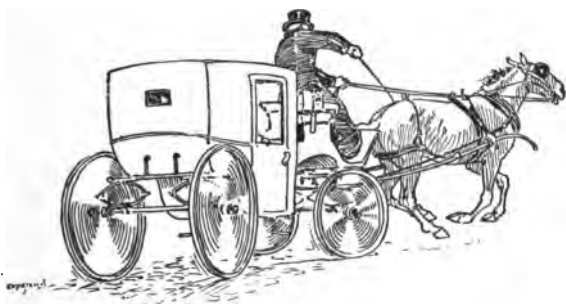
“If you in the morning
Throw minutes away,
You can’t pick them up
In the course of the day.

[192]

You may hurry and scurry,
And flurry and worry,
You've lost them forever,
Forever and aye."

4625

He could not bear any careless loitering, and waste of time; and nothing was so near making him angry, as to find people who were always late, wanting a cab horse to be driven hard, to make up for their idleness.



"Slashing his fated horse, he set off as hard as he could"

One day, two wild-looking young men came out of a tavern close by the stand, and called Jerry.

"Here, cabby! look sharp, we are rather late. Put on the steam, will you, and take us to the Victoria in time for the one o'clock train? You shall have a shilling extra."

4640

"I will take you at the regular pace, gentlemen; shillings don't pay for putting on the steam like that."

Larry's cab was standing next to ours; he

4445 flung open the door, and said, "I'm your man, gentlemen! take my cab, my horse will get you there all right;" and as he shut them in, with a wink towards Jerry, said, "It's against his conscience to go beyond a jog-trot." Then slashing
4450 his jaded horse, he set off as hard as he could. Jerry patted me on the neck — "No, Jack, a shilling would not pay for that sort of thing, would it, old boy?"

Although Jerry was determinately set against
4455 hard driving, to please careless people, he always went a good fair pace, and was not against putting on the steam, as he said, if only he knew *why*.

I well remember one morning, as we were on the stand waiting for a fare, that a young man,
4460 carrying a heavy portmanteau, trod on a piece of orange peel which lay on the pavement, and fell down with great force.

Jerry was the first to run and lift him up. He seemed much stunned, and as they led him into
4465 a shop, he walked as if he were in great pain. Jerry of course came back to the stand, but in about ten minutes one of the shopmen called him, so we drew up to the pavement.

"Can you take me to the South-Eastern Railway?" said the young man; "this unlucky fall
4470 has made me late, I fear; but it is of great importance that I should not lose the twelve o'clock train. I should be most thankful if you could get me there in time, and will gladly pay you an
4475 extra fare."

"I'll do my very best," said Jerry heartily, "if you think you are well enough, sir," for he looked dreadfully white and ill.

"I *must* go," he said, earnestly, "please to open the door, and let us lose no time." 4680

The next minute Jerry was on the box; with a cheery chirrup to me, and a twitch of the rein that I well understood.

"Now then, Jack, my boy," said he, "spin along; we'll show them how we can get over the 4685 ground, if we only know why."

It is always difficult to drive fast in the city in the middle of the day, when the streets are full of traffic, but we did what could be done; and when a good driver and a good horse, who understand 4690 each other, are of one mind, it is wonderful what they can do. I had a very good mouth—that is, I could be guided by the slightest touch of the rein, and that is a great thing in London, amongst carriages, omnibuses, carts, vans, trucks, cabs, 4695 and great wagons creeping along at a walking pace; some going one way, some another, some going slowly, others wanting to pass them, omnibuses stopping short every few minutes to take up a passenger, obliging the horse that is com- 4700 ing behind to pull up too, or to pass, and get before them. Perhaps you try to pass, but just then, something else comes dashing in through the narrow opening, and you have to keep in behind the omnibus again. Presently you think 4705 you see a chance, and manage to get to the front,

going so near the wheels on each side, that half-an-inch nearer and they would scrape. Well—you get along for a bit, but soon find yourself in
4713 a long train of carts and carriages all obliged to go at a walk. Perhaps you come to a regular block-up, and have to stand still for minutes together, till something clears out into a side street, or the policeman interferes. You have to
4715 be ready for any chance—to dash forward if there be an opening, and be quick as a rat dog to see if there be room, and if there be time, lest you get your own wheels locked, or smashed, or the shaft of some other vehicle run into your
4720 chest or shoulder. All this is what you have to be ready for. If you want to get through London fast in the middle of the day, it wants a deal of practice.

Jerry and I were used to it, and no one could
4725 beat us at getting through when we were set upon it. I was quick and bold, and could always trust my driver; Jerry was quick, and patient at the same time, and could trust his horse, which was a great thing too. He very seldom used the
4730 whip; I knew by his voice, and his click click, when he wanted to get on fast, and by the rein where I was to go; so there was no need for whipping; but I must go back to my story.

The streets were very full that day, but we
4735 got on pretty well as far as the bottom of Cheapside, where there was a block for three or four minutes. The young man put his head out, and

said anxiously, "I think I had better get out and walk, I shall never get there if this goes on."

"I'll do all that can be done, sir," said Jerry, ⁴⁷⁴⁰
 "I think we shall be in time; this block-up cannot last much longer, and your luggage is very heavy for you to carry, sir."

Just then the cart in front of us began to move on, and then we had a good turn. In and ⁴⁷⁴⁵
 out—in and out we went, as fast as horseflesh



"There was a whole train of cabs and carriages all going our way"

could do it, and for a wonder had a good clear time on London Bridge, for there was a whole train of cabs and carriages, all going our way at a quick trot—perhaps wanting to catch that very ⁴⁷⁵⁰
 train; at any rate, we whirled into the station with many more, just as the great clock pointed to eight minutes to twelve o'clock.

"Thank God! we are in time," said the young man, "and thank you too, my friend, and your ⁴⁷⁵⁵

good horse; you have saved me more than money can ever pay for; take this extra half-crown."

"No, sir, no, thank you all the same; so glad we
4760 hit the time, sir, but don't stay now, sir, the bell is ringing. Here, porter! take this gentleman's luggage — Dover line — twelve o'clock train — that's it," and without waiting for another word, Jerry wheeled me round to make room for other
4765 cabs that were dashing up at the last minute, and drew up on one side till the crush was past.

"'So glad!' he said, 'so glad!', poor young fellow! I wonder what it was that made him so anxious!"

4770 Jerry often talked to himself quite loud enough for me to hear, when we were not moving.

On Jerry's return to the rank, there was a good deal of laughing and chaffing at him, for
4775 driving hard to the train for an extra fare, as they said, all against his principles; and they wanted to know how much he had pocketed

"A good deal more than I generally get," said he, nodding slyly; "what he gave me will keep
4780 me in little comforts for several days."

"Gammon!" said one.

"He's a humbug," said another, "preaching to us, and then doing the same himself."

"Look here, mates," said Jerry, "the gentle-
4785 man offered me half-a-crown extra, but I didn't take it; 'twas quite pay enough for me to see

how glad he was to catch that train; and if Jack and I choose to have a quick run now and then, to please ourselves, that's our business and not yours."

4790

"Well," said Larry, "*you'll* never be a rich man."

"Most likely not," said Jerry, "but I don't know that I shall be the less happy for that. I have heard the commandments read a great many times, and I never noticed that any of them said, 'Thou shalt be rich'; and there are a good many curious things said in the New Testament about rich men, that I think would make me feel rather queer if I was one of them."

4800

"If you ever do get rich," said Governor Gray, looking over his shoulder across the top of his cab, "you'll deserve it, Jerry, and you won't find a curse come with your wealth. As for you, Larry, you'll die poor; you spend too much in whipcord."

"Well," said Larry, "what is a fellow to do if his horse won't go without it?"

"You never take the trouble to see if he will go without it; your whip is always going as if you had the St. Vitus' dance in your arm; and if it does not wear you out, it wears your horse out; you know you are always changing your horses, and why? because you never give them any peace or encouragement."

4815

"Well, I have not had good luck," said Larry, "that's where it is."

"And you never will," said the Governor;
"Good Luck is rather particular who she rides
4820 with, and mostly prefers those who have got
common sense and a good heart; at least, that is
my experience."

Governor Gray turned round again to his
newspaper, and the other men went to their cabs.



CHAPTER XXXVI.

THE SUNDAY CAB

ONE morning, as Jerry had just put me into the shafts and was fastening the traces, a gentleman walked into the yard. "Your servant, sir," said Jerry.

"Good-morning, Mr. Barker," said the gentleman. "I should be glad to make some arrangements with you for taking Mrs. Briggs regularly to church on Sunday mornings. We go to the New Church now, and that is rather further than she can walk."

"Thank you, sir," said Jerry, "but I have only taken out a six days' license,¹ and therefore I could not take a fare on a Sunday, it would not be legal."

"Oh!" said the other, "I did not know yours was a six days' cab; but of course it would be very easy to alter your license. I would see that you did not lose by it; the fact is, Mrs. Briggs very much prefers you to drive her."

"I should be glad to oblige the lady, sir, but I had a seven days' license once, and the work was too hard for me, and too hard for my horses."

¹ A few years since the annual charge for a cab license was very much reduced, and the difference between the six and seven days' cabs was abolished.

Year in and year out, not a day's rest, and never a Sunday with my wife and children, and never able to go to a place of worship, which I had
4860 always been used to do before I took to the driving box; so for the last five years I have only taken a six days' license, and I find it better all the way round."

"Well, of course," replied Mr. Briggs, "it is
4865 very proper that every person should have rest, and be able to go to church on Sundays, but I should have thought you would not have minded such a short distance for the horse, and only once a day; you would have all the afternoon
4880 and evening for yourself, and we are very good customers, you know."

"Yes, sir, that is true, and I am grateful for all favors, I am sure, and anything that I could do to oblige you, or the lady, I should be proud and
4885 happy to do; but I can't give up my Sundays, sir, indeed I can't. I read that God made man, and He made horses and all the other beasts, and as soon as He had made them, He made a day of rest, and bade that all should rest one day in
4870 seven; and I think, sir, He must have known what was good for them, and I am sure it is good for me; I am stronger and healthier altogether, now that I have a day of rest; the horses are fresh too, and do not wear up nearly so fast. The
4875 six-day drivers all tell me the same, and I have laid by more money in the Savings Bank than ever I did before; and as for the wife and

children, sir — why, heart alive! they would not go back to the seven days for all they could see."

"Oh, very well," said the gentleman. "Don't 4890 trouble yourself, Mr. Barker, any further; I will inquire somewhere else," and he walked away.

"Well," says Jerry to me, "we can't help it, Jack, old boy, we must have our Sundays."

"Polly!" he shouted, "Polly! come here." 4895

She was there in a minute.

"What is it all about, Jerry?"

"Why, my dear, Mr. Briggs wants me to take Mrs. Briggs to church every Sunday morning. I say, I have only a six days' license. He says 4896 'Get a seven days' license, and I'll make it worth your while'; and you know, Polly, they are very good customers to us. Mrs. Briggs often goes out shopping for hours, or making calls, and then she pays down fair and honorable like a lady; there's 4898 no beating down, or making three hours into two hours and a half, as some folks do; and it is easy work for the horses; not like tearing along to catch trains for people that are always a quarter of an hour too late; and if I don't oblige her in 4900 this matter, it is very likely we shall lose them altogether. What do you say, little woman?"

"I say, Jerry," says she, speaking very slowly, "I say, if Mrs. Briggs would give you a sovereign every Sunday morning, I would not have you a 4905 seven days' cabman again. We have known what it was to have no Sundays; and now we know what it is to call them our own. Thank

God, you earn enough to keep us, though it is
4910 sometimes close work to pay for all the oats and
hay, the license, and the rent besides; but Harry
will soon be earning something, and I would
rather struggle on harder than we do, than go
back to those horrid times, when you hardly had
4915 a minute to look at your own children, and we
never could go to a place of worship together, or
have a happy, quiet day. God forbid that we
should ever turn back to those times: that's
what I say, Jerry."

4920 "And that is just what I told Mr. Briggs, my
dear," said Jerry, "and what I mean to stick to;
so don't go and fret yourself, Polly (for she had
begun to cry); I would not go back to the old
times if I earned twice as much, so that is set-
4925 tled, little woman. Now cheer up, and I'll be off
to the stand."

Three weeks had passed away after this con-
versation, and no order had come from Mrs.
Briggs; so there was nothing but taking jobs
4930 from the stand. Jerry took it to heart a good
deal, for of course the work was harder for horse
and man; but Polly would always cheer him up
and say, "Never mind, father, never mind —

4935 Do your best,
 And leave the rest,
 'Twill all come right
 Some day or night."

It soon became known that Jerry had lost his
best customer, and for what reason; most of the

men said he was a fool, but two or three took his ⁴⁹⁴⁰ part.

"If working men don't stick to their Sunday, said Truman, "they'll soon have none left; it is every man's right and every beast's right. By God's law we have a day of rest, and by the law ⁴⁹⁴⁵ of England we have a day of rest; and I say we ought to hold to the rights these laws give us, and keep them for our children."

"All very well for you religious chaps to talk so," said Larry, "but I'll turn a shilling when I can. ⁴⁹⁵⁰ I don't believe in religion, for I don't see that your religious people are any better than the rest."

"If they are not better," put in Jerry, "it is because they are *not* religious. You might as well say that our country's laws are not good ⁴⁹⁵⁵ because some people break them. If a man gives way to his temper, and speaks evil of his neighbor, and does not pay his debts, he is *not* religious; I don't care how much he goes to church. If some men are shams and hum- ⁴⁹⁶⁰ bugs, that does not make religion untrue. Real religion is the best and the truest thing in the world; and the only thing that can make a man really happy, or make the world any better."

"If religion was good for anything," said ⁴⁹⁶⁵ Jones, "it would prevent your religious people from making us work on Sundays as you know many of them do, and that's why I say religion is nothing but a sham—why, if it was not for the church and chapel goers it would be hardly ⁴⁹⁷⁰

worth while our coming out on a Sunday; but they have their privileges, as they call them, and I go without. I shall expect them to answer for my soul, if I can't get a chance of saving it."

4975 Several of the men applauded this, till Jerry said —

"That may sound well enough, but it won't do; every man must look after his own soul; you can't lay it down at another man's door like a
4980 foundling, and expect him to take care of it; and don't you see, if you are always sitting on your box waiting for a fare, they will say, 'If we don't take him, some one else will, and he does not look for any Sunday.' Of course they don't go to the
4985 bottom of it, or they would see if they never came for a cab, it would be no use your standing there; but people don't always like to go to the bottom of things; it may not be convenient to do it; but if you Sunday drivers would all strike for a day
4990 of rest, the thing would be done."

"And what would all the good people do, if they could not get to their favorite preachers?" said Larry.

"'Tis not for me to lay down plans for other
4995 people," said Jerry, "but if they can't walk so far, they can go to what is nearer; and if it should rain they can put on their mackintoshes as they do on a week-day. If a thing is right, it *can* be done, and if it is wrong, it *can be done without*;
5000 and a good man will find a way; and that is as true for us cabmen as it is for the church-goers."

CHAPTER XXXVII.

THE GOLDEN RULE

TWO or three weeks after this, as we came into the yard rather late in the evening, Polly came running across the road with the lantern (she always brought it to him if it was not very wet). 5005

"It has all come right, Jerry; Mrs. Briggs sent her servant this afternoon, to ask you to take her out to-morrow at eleven o'clock. I said, 'Yes, I thought so, but we supposed she employed some- 5010 one else now.'

"'Well,' says he, 'the real fact is, master was put out because Mr. Barker refused to come on Sundays, and he has been trying other cabs, but there's something wrong with them all; some 5015 drive too fast, and some too slow, and the mistress says, there is not one of them so nice and clean as yours, and nothing will suit her but Mr. Barker's cab again.'"

Polly was almost out of breath, and Jerry 5020 broke out into a merry laugh —

"All come right some day or night; you were right, my dear; you generally are. Run in and get the supper, and I'll have Jack's harness off and make him snug and happy in no time." 5025

After this, Mrs. Briggs wanted Jerry's cab quite as often as before, never, however, on a Sunday; but there came a day when we had Sunday work, and this was how it happened. We
5030 had all come home on the Saturday night very tired, and very glad to think that the next day would be all rest, but so it was not to be.

On Sunday morning Jerry was cleaning me in the yard, when Polly stepped up to him, looking
5035 very full of something.

"What is it?" said Jerry.

"Well, my dear," she said, "poor Dinah Brown has just had a letter brought to say that her mother is dangerously ill, and that she must
5040 go directly if she wishes to see her alive. The place is more than ten miles away from here, out in the country, and she says if she takes the train she should still have four miles to walk; and so weak as she is, and the baby only four
5045 weeks old, of course that would be impossible; and she wants to know if you would take her in your cab, and she promises to pay you faithfully as she can get the money."

"Tut, tut, we'll see about that. It was not the
5050 money I was thinking about, but of losing our Sunday; the horses are tired, and I am tired too—that's where it pinches."

"It pinches all round, for that matter," said Polly, "for it's only half Sunday without you, but
5055 you know we should do to other people as we should like they should do to us; and I know

very well what I should like if my mother was dying; and Jerry, dear, I am sure it won't break the Sabbath; for if pulling a poor beast or donkey out of a pit would not spoil it, I am quite ⁵⁰⁸⁰ sure taking poor Dinah would not do it."

"Why, Polly, you are as good as the minister, and so, as I've had my Sunday morning sermon early to-day, you may go and tell Dinah that I'll be ready for her as the clock strikes ten; but stop ⁵⁰⁸⁵—just step round to butcher Braydon's with my compliments, and ask him if he would lend me his light trap; I know he never uses it on the Sunday, and it would make a wonderful difference to the horse." ⁵⁰⁷⁰

Away she went, and soon returned, saying that he could have the trap and welcome.

"All right," said he, "now put me up a bit of bread and cheese, and I'll be back in the afternoon as soon as I can." ⁵⁰⁷⁵

"And I'll have the meat pie ready for an early tea instead of for dinner," said Polly; and away she went, whilst he made his preparations to the tune of "Polly's the woman and no mistake," of which tune he was very fond. ⁵⁰⁸⁰

I was selected for the journey, and at ten o'clock we started, in a light, high-wheeled gig, which ran so easily, that after the four-wheeled cab, it seemed like nothing.

It was a fine May day, and as soon as we were ⁵⁰⁸⁵ out of the town, the sweet air, the smell of the fresh grass, and the soft country roads were as

pleasant as they used to be in the old times, and I soon began to feel quite fresh.

5090 Dinah's family lived in a small farmhouse, up a green lane, close by a meadow with some fine shady trees: there were two cows feeding in it. A young man asked Jerry to bring his trap into



"Dinah's family lived in a small farmhouse, up a green lane"

the meadow, and he would tie me up in the cow-shed; he wished he had a better stable to offer.

5095 "If your cows would not be offended," said Jerry, "there is nothing my horse would like so well as to have an hour or two in your beautiful meadow; he's quiet, and it would be a rare treat for him."

5100 "Do, and welcome," said the young man; "the best we have is at your service for your kindness to my sister; we shall be having some dinner in an hour, and I hope you'll come in, though with mother so ill we are all out of sorts in the house."

Jerry thanked him kindly, but said as he

had some dinner with him, there was nothing he should like so well as walking about in the meadow.

When my harness was taken off, I did not⁵¹¹⁰ know what I should do first—whether to eat the grass, or roll over on my back, or lie down and rest, or have a gallop across the meadow out of sheer spirits at being free; and I did all by turns. Jerry seemed to be quite as happy as I⁵¹¹⁵ was; he sat down by a bank under a shady tree, and listened to the birds, then he sang himself, and read out of the little brown book he is so fond of, then wandered round the meadow and down by a little brook, where he picked the⁵¹²⁰ flowers and the hawthorn, and tied them up with long sprays of ivy; then he gave me a good feed of the oats which he had brought with him; but the time seemed all too short—I had not been in a field since I left poor Ginger at Earlshall.⁵¹²⁵

We came home gently, and Jerry's first words were as we came into the yard, "Well, Polly, I have not lost my Sunday after all, for the birds were singing hymns in every bush, and I joined in the service; and as for Jack, he was like a⁵¹³⁰ young colt."

When he handed Dolly the flowers, she jumped about for joy.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

DOLLY AND A REAL GENTLEMAN

5135 **T**HE winter came in early, with a great deal
of cold and wet. There was snow, or sleet,
or rain, almost every day for weeks, chang-
ing only for keen driving winds, or sharp frosts.
The horses all felt it very much. When it is a
dry cold, a couple of good thick rugs will keep
5140 the warmth in us; but when it is soaking rain,
they soon get wet through and are no good.
Some of the drivers had a waterproof cover to
throw over, which was a fine thing; but some of
the men were so poor that they could not protect
5145 either themselves or their horses, and many of
them suffered very much that winter. When we
horses had worked half the day we went to our
dry stables, and could rest; whilst they had to sit
on their boxes, sometimes staying out as late as
5150 one or two o'clock in the morning, if they had a
party to wait for.

When the streets were slippery with frost or
snow, that was the worst of all for us horses; one
mile of such traveling, with a weight to draw,
5155 and no firm footing, would take more out of
us than four on a good road; every nerve and
muscle of our bodies is on the strain to keep our
balance; and added to this, the fear of falling

is more exhausting than anything else. If the roads are very bad indeed, our shoes are roughed, ⁵¹⁶⁰ but that makes us feel nervous at first.

When the weather was very bad, many of the men would go and sit in the tavern close by, and get some one to watch for them; but they often lost a fare in that way, and could not, as Jerry ⁵¹⁶⁵ said, be there without spending money. He never went to the "Rising Sun"; there was a coffee-shop near, where he now and then went—or he bought of an old man, who came to our rank with tins of hot coffee and pies. It was his ⁵¹⁷⁰ opinion that spirits and beer made a man colder afterward, and that dry clothes, good food, cheerfulness, and a comfortable wife at home, were the best things to keep a cabman warm. Polly always supplied him with something to eat when he ⁵¹⁷⁵ could not get home, and sometimes he would see little Dolly peeping from the corner of the street, to make sure if "father" was on the stand. If she saw him, she would run off at full speed and soon come back with something in a tin or basket ⁵¹⁸⁰—some hot soup or pudding that Polly had ready. It was wonderful how such a little thing could get safely across the street, often thronged with horses and carriages; but she was a brave little maid, and felt it quite an honor to bring "father's ⁵¹⁸⁵ first course," as he used to call it. She was a general favorite on the stand, and there was not a man who would not have seen her safely across the street, if Jerry had not been able to do it.

5190 One cold windy day, Dolly had brought Jerry a basin of something hot, and was standing by him whilst he ate it. He had scarcely begun, when a gentleman, walking towards us very fast, held up his umbrella. Jerry touched his hat in
5195 return, gave the basin to Dolly, and was taking off my cloth, when the gentleman, hastening up, cried out, "No, no, finish your soup, my friend; I have not much time to spare, but I can wait till you have done, and set your little girl safe on the



"Jerry touched his hat in return"

5200 pavement." So saying, he seated himself in the cab. Jerry thanked him kindly, and came back to Dolly.

"There, Dolly, that's a gentleman; that's a real gentleman, Dolly; he has got time and thought
5205 for the comfort of a poor cabman and a little girl."

Jerry finished his soup, set the child across, and then took his orders to drive to "Clapham Rise." Several times after that, the same gentleman took our cab. I think he was very fond of
5210 dogs and horses, for whenever we took him to his own door, two or three dogs would come bounding out to meet him. Sometimes he came round

and patted me, saying in his quiet, pleasant way, "This horse has got a good master, and he deserves it." It was a very rare thing for any one to notice the horse that had been working for him. I have known ladies do it now and then, and this gentleman, and one or two others have given me a pat and a kind word; but ninety-nine out of a hundred would as soon think of patting the steam engine that drew the train.

This gentleman was not young, and there was a forward stoop in his shoulders as if he was always going at something. His lips were thin, and close shut, though they had a very pleasant smile; his eye was keen, and there was something in his jaw and the motion of his head that made one think he was very determined in anything he set about. His voice was pleasant and kind; any horse would trust that voice, though it was just as decided as everything else about him.

One day, he and another gentleman took our cab; they stopped at a shop in R——Street, and whilst his friend went in, he stood at the door. A little ahead of us on the other side of the street, a cart with two very fine horses was standing before some wine vaults; the carter was not with them, and I cannot tell how long they had been standing, but they seemed to think they had waited long enough, and began to move off. Before they had gone many paces, the carter came running out and caught them. He seemed furious at their having moved, and with whip

and rein punished them brutally, even beating
5245 them about the head. Our gentleman saw it all,
and stepping quickly across the street, said in a
decided voice —

“If you don’t stop that directly, I’ll have you
summoned for leaving your horses, and for brutal
5250 conduct.”

The man, who had clearly been drinking,
poured forth some abusive language, but he left
off knocking the horses about, and taking the
reins, got into his cart; meantime our friend had
5255 quietly taken a note-book from his pocket, and
looking at the name and address painted on the
cart, he wrote something down.

“What do you want with that?” growled the
carter, as he cracked his whip and was moving on.
5260 A nod, and a grim smile, was the only answer
he got.

On returning to the cab, our friend was joined
by his companion, who said laughingly, “I should
have thought, Wright, you had enough business
5265 of your own to look after, without troubling your-
self about other people’s horses and servants.”

Our friend stood still for a moment, and throw-
ing his head a little back, “Do you know why
this world is as bad as it is?”

5270 “No,” said the other.

“Then I’ll tell you. It is because people think
only about their own business, and won’t trouble
themselves to stand up for the oppressed, nor
bring the wrong-doer to light. I never see a

wicked thing like this without doing what I can, ⁵⁷²⁵ and many a master has thanked me for letting him know how his horses have been used."

"I wish there were more gentlemen like you, sir," said Jerry, "for they are wanted badly enough in this city."

⁵⁸²⁰

After this we continued our journey, and as they got out of the cab, our friend was saying, "My doctrine is this, that if we see cruelty or wrong that we have the power to stop, and do nothing, we make ourselves sharers in the guilt." ⁵⁸²⁵



CHAPTER XXXIX.

SEEDY SAM

I SHOULD say, that for a cab-horse I was very well off indeed; my driver was my owner, and it was his interest to treat me well, and not overwork me, even had he not been so good
5290 a man as he was: but there were a great many horses which belonged to the large cab-owners, who let them out to their drivers for so much money a day. As the horses did not belong to these men, the only thing they thought of was,
5305 how to get their money out of them, first, to pay the master, and then to provide for their own living, and a dreadful time some of these horses had of it. Of course I understood but little, but it was often talked over on the stand, and the
5300 Governor, who was a kind-hearted man, and fond of horses, would sometimes speak up if one came in very much jaded or ill-used.

One day a shabby, miserable-looking driver, who went by the name of "Seedy Sam," brought
5305 in his horse looking dreadfully beat, and the Governor said—

"You and your horse look more fit for the police station than for this rank."

The man flung his tattered rug over the horse,
5310 turned full round upon the Governor, and said, in a voice that sounded almost desperate—

"If the police have any business with the matter, it ought to be with the masters who charge us so much, or with the fares that are fixed so low. If a man has to pay eighteen shillings a day⁵³¹⁵ for the use of a cab and two horses, as many of us have to do in the season, and must make that up before we earn a penny for ourselves — I say, 'tis more than hard work; nine shillings a day to get out of each horse, before you begin to get⁵³²⁰ your own living; you know that's true, and if the horses don't work we must starve, and I and my children have known what that is before now. I've six of 'em, and only one earns anything; I am on the stand fourteen or sixteen hours a day,⁵³²⁵ and I haven't had a Sunday these ten or twelve weeks; you know, Skinner never gives a day if he can help it, and if I don't work hard, tell me who does! I want a warm coat and a mackintosh, but with so many to feed, how can a man get it?⁵³³⁰ I had to pledge my clock a week ago to pay Skinner, and I shall never see it again."

Some of the other drivers stood round nodding their heads and saying he was right. The man went on —

5335

"You that have your own horses and cabs, or drive for good masters, have a chance of getting on, and a chance of doing right; I haven't. We can't charge more than sixpence a mile after the first, within the four-mile radius. This very⁵³⁴⁰ morning I had to go a clear six miles and only took three shillings. I could not get a return

fare, and had to come all the way back; there's twelve miles for the horse and three shillings for
5345 me. After that I had a three-mile fare, and there were bags and boxes enough to have brought in a good many twopences if they had been put outside; but you know how people do; all that could be piled up inside on the front seat, were put in,
5360 and three heavy boxes went on the top, that was sixpence, and the fare one and sixpence; then I got a return for a shilling; now that makes eighteen miles for the horse and six shillings for me; there's three shillings still for that horse to earn,
5365 and nine shillings for the afternoon horse before I touch a penny. Of course it is not always so bad as that, but you know it often is, and I say 'tis a mockery to tell a man that he must not overwork his horse, for when a beast is downright
5380 tired, there's nothing but the whip that will keep his legs a-going—you can't help yourself—you must put your wife and children before the horse, the masters must look to that, we can't. I don't ill-use my horse for the sake of it; none of you
5365 can say I do. There's wrong lays somewhere—never a day's rest—never a quiet hour with the wife and children. I often feel like an old man, though I'm only forty-five. You know how quick some of the gentry are to suspect us of cheating
5370 and overcharging; why, they stand with their purses in their hands, counting it over to a penny, and looking at us as if we were pick-pockets. I wish some of 'em had got to sit on

my box sixteen hours a day, and get a living out of it, and eighteen shillings besides, and that in ⁵⁸⁷⁵ all weathers; they would not be so uncommon particular never to give us a sixpence over, or to cram all the luggage inside. Of course, some of 'em tip us pretty handsome now and then, or else we could not live, but you can't *depend* upon that." ⁵⁸⁸⁰

The men who stood round, much approved this speech, and one of them said, "It is desperate hard, and if a man sometimes does what is wrong, it is no wonder, and if he gets a dram too much, who's to blow him up?" ⁵⁸⁸⁵

Jerry had taken no part in this conversation, but I never saw his face look so sad before. The Governor had stood with both his hands in his pockets; now he took his handkerchief out of his hat, and wiped his forehead. ⁵⁸⁹⁰

"You've beaten me, Sam," he said, "for it's all true, and I won't cast it up to you any more about the police; it was the look in that horse's eye that came over me. It is hard lines for man, and it is hard lines for beast, and who's to mend it I ⁵⁸⁹⁵ don't know; but any way you might tell the poor beast that you were sorry to take it out of him in that way. Sometimes a kind word is all we can give 'em, poor brutes, and 'tis wonderful what they do understand." ⁵⁴⁰⁰

A few mornings after this talk, a new man came on the stand with Sam's cab.

"Halloo!" said one, "what's up with Seedy Sam?"

5405 "He's ill in bed," said the man; "he was taken last night in the yard, and could scarcely crawl home. His wife sent a boy this morning to say his father was in a high fever and could not get out; so I'm here instead."

5410 The next morning the same man came again. "How is Sam?" enquired the Governor.

"He's gone," said the man.

"What, gone? You don't mean to say he's dead?"

5415 "Just snuffed out," said the other; "he died at four o'clock this morning; all yesterday he was raving—raving about Skinner, and having no Sundays. 'I never had a Sunday's rest,' these were his last words."

5420 No one spoke for a while, and then the Governor said, "I tell you what, mates, this is a warning for us."



CHAPTER XL.

POOR GINGER

ONE day, whilst our cab and many others were waiting outside one of the Parks, where a band was playing, a shabby old cab drove up beside ours. The horse was an old worn-out chestnut, with an ill-kept coat, and



"It was Ginger! but how changed!"

bones that showed plainly through it. The knees knuckled over, and the forelegs were very unsteady. I had been eating some hay, and the wind rolled a little lock of it that way, and the poor creature put out her long thin neck and picked it up, and then turned round and looked about for more. There was a hopeless look in the dull eye that I could not help noticing, and

then, as I was thinking where I had seen that horse before, she looked full at me and said, "Black Beauty, is that you?"

It was Ginger! but how changed! The beautifully arched and glossy neck was now straight, and lank, and fallen in, the clean straight legs and delicate fetlocks were swelled; the joints were grown out of shape with hard work; the face, that was once so full of spirit and life, was now full of suffering, and I could tell by the heaving of her sides, and her frequent cough, how bad her breath was.

Our drivers were standing together a little way off, so I sidled up to her a step or two, that we might have a little quiet talk. It was a sad tale that she had to tell.

After a twelvemonth's run off at Earlshall, she was considered to be fit for work again, and was sold to a gentleman. For a little while she got on very well, but after a longer gallop than usual, the old strain returned, and after being rested and doctored, she was again sold. In this way she changed hands several times, but always getting lower down.

"And so at last," said she, "I was bought by a man who keeps a number of cabs and horses, and lets them out. You look well off, and I am glad of it, but I could not tell you what my life has been. When they found out my weakness, they said I was not worth what they gave for me, and that I must go into one of the low cabs, and just

be used up; that is what they are doing, whipping and working with never one thought of what I suffer; they paid for me, and must get it out of me, they say. The man who hires me ⁵⁴⁷⁰ now, pays a deal of money to the owner every day, and so he has to get it out of me too; and so it's all the week round and round, with never a Sunday rest."

I said, "You used to stand up for yourself if ⁵⁴⁷⁵ you were ill-used."

"Ah!" she said, "I did once, but it's no use; men are strongest, and if they are cruel and have no feeling, there is nothing that we can do, but just bear it, bear it on and on to the end. I wish ⁵⁴⁸⁰ the end was come, I wish I was dead. I have seen dead horses, and I am sure they do not suffer pain; I wish I may drop down dead at my work, and not be sent off to the knackers."

I was very much troubled, and I put my nose ⁵⁴⁸⁵ up to hers, but I could say nothing to comfort her. I think she was pleased to see me, for she said, "You are the only friend I ever had."

Just then her driver came up, and with a tug at her mouth, backed her out of the line and ⁵⁴⁹⁰ drove off, leaving me very sad indeed.

A short time after this, a cart with a dead horse in it passed our cab-stand. The head hung out of the cart tail, the lifeless tongue was slowly dripping with blood; and the sunken eyes! but ⁵⁴⁹⁵ I can't speak of them, the sight was too dreadful. It was a chestnut horse with a long thin neck. I

saw a white streak down the forehead. I believe it was Ginger; I hoped it was, for then her troubles would be over. Oh! if men were more merciful, they would shoot us before we came to such misery.



CHAPTER XLI.

THE BUTCHER

I SAW a great deal of trouble amongst the horses in London, and much of it that might have been prevented by a little common ⁵³⁰⁵ sense. We horses do not mind hard work if we are treated reasonably; and I am sure there are many driven by quite poor men who have a happier life than I had, when I used to go in the Countess of W——'s carriage, with my silver- ⁵³¹⁰ mounted harness and high feeding.

It often went to my heart to see how the little ponies were used, straining along with heavy loads, or staggering under heavy blows from some low cruel boy. Once I saw a little gray ⁵³¹⁵ pony with a thick mane and a pretty head, and so much like Merrylegs, that if I had not been in harness, I should have neighed to him. He was doing his best to pull a heavy cart, while a strong rough boy was cutting him under the ⁵³²⁰ belly with his whip, and chucking cruelly at his little mouth. Could it be Merrylegs? It was just like him; but then Mr. Blomefield was never to sell him, and I think he would not do it; but this might have been quite as good a little fel- ⁵³²⁵ low, and had as happy a place when he was young.

I often noticed the great speed at which butchers' horses were made to go, though I did
5530 not know why it was so, till one day when we had to wait some time in "St. John's Wood." There was a butcher's shop next door, and as we were standing, a butcher's cart came dashing up at a great pace. The horse was hot, and much
5535 exhausted; he hung his head down, while his heaving sides and trembling legs showed how hard he had been driven. The lad jumped out of the cart and was getting the basket, when the master came out of the shop much displeased.
5540 After looking at the horse, he turned angrily to the lad: —

"How many times shall I tell you not to drive in this way? You ruined the last horse and broke his wind, and you are going to ruin this in
5545 the same way. If you were not my own son, I would dismiss you on the spot; it is a disgrace to have a horse brought to the shop in a condition like that; you are liable to be taken up by the police for such driving, and if you are, you need
5550 not look to me for bail, for I have spoken to you till I am tired; you must look out for yourself."

During this speech, the boy had stood by, sullen and dogged, but when his father ceased, he broke out angrily. It wasn't his fault, and he
5555 wouldn't take the blame, he was only going by orders all the time.

"You always say, 'Now be quick; now look sharp!' and when I go to the houses, one wants a

leg of mutton for an early dinner, and I must be back with it in a quarter of an hour. Another ⁵⁵⁶⁰ cook had forgotten to order the beef; I must go and fetch it and be back in no time, or the mistress will scold; and the housekeeper says they have company coming unexpectedly and must have some chops sent up directly; and the lady ⁵⁵⁶⁵ at No. 4, in the Crescent, *never* orders her dinner till the meat comes in for lunch, and it's nothing



"Some as fond of their donkey as a favorite dog"

but hurry, hurry, all the time. If the gentry would think of what they want, and order their meat the day before, there need not be this ⁵⁵⁷⁰ blow up!"

"I wish to goodness they would," said the butcher; "'twould save me a wonderful deal of harass, and I could suit my customers much better if I knew beforehand—but there—what's the ⁵⁵⁷⁵ use of talking—who ever thinks of a butcher's convenience, or a butcher's horse? Now then,

take him in, and look to him well; mind, he does not go out again to-day, and if anything else is
5580 wanted, you must carry it yourself in the basket."

* With that he went in, and the horse was led away.

But all boys are not cruel. I have seen some as fond of their pony or donkey as if it had been a favorite dog, and the little creatures have
5585 worked away as cheerfully and willingly for their young drivers as I worked for Jerry. It may be hard work sometimes, but a friend's hand and voice make it easy.

There was a young coster-boy who came up
5590 our street with greens and potatoes; he had an old pony, not very handsome, but the cheerfulness and pluckiest little thing I ever saw, and to see how fond those two were of each other was a treat. The pony followed his master like a dog,
5595 and when he got into his cart, would trot off without a whip or a word, and rattle down the street as merrily as if he had come out of the Queen's stables. Jerry liked the boy, and called him "Prince Charlie," for he said he would make
5600 a king of drivers some day.

There was an old man, too, who used to come up our street with a little coal cart; he wore a coal-heaver's hat, and looked rough and black. He and his old horse used to plod together along
5605 the street like two good partners who understood each other; the horse would stop of his own accord, at the doors where they took coal of him; he used to keep one ear bent towards his master.

The old man's cry could be heard up the street long before he came near. I never knew what ⁵⁶¹⁰ he said, but the children called him "Old Ba-a-ar Hoo," for it sounded like that. Polly took her coal of him, and was very friendly, and Jerry said it was a comfort to think how happy an old horse *might* be in a poor place. ⁵⁶¹⁵



CHAPTER XLII.

THE ELECTION

AS we came into the yard one afternoon, Polly came out, "Jerry! I've had Mr. B — here asking about your vote, and he wants to hire your cab for the election; he will call for an
5620 answer."

"Well, Polly, you may say that my cab will be otherwise engaged; I should not like to have it pasted over with their great bills, and as to make Jack and Captain race about to the public-
5625 houses to bring up half-drunken voters, why, I think 'twould be an insult to the horses. No, I shan't do it."

"I suppose you'll vote for the gentleman? He said he was of your politics."

5630 "So he is in some things, but I shall not vote for him, Polly; you know what his trade is?"

"Yes."

"Well, a man who gets rich by that trade may be all very well in some ways, but he is blind as
5635 to what working men want; I could not in my conscience send him up to make the laws. I dare say they'll be angry, but every man must do what he thinks to be the best for his country."

On the morning before the election, Jerry was
5640 putting me into the shafts, when Dolly came into

the yard sobbing and crying, with her little blue frock and white pinafore spattered all over with mud.

"Why, Dolly, what is the matter?"

"Those naughty boys," she sobbed, "have⁵⁶⁴⁸ thrown the dirt all over me, and called me a little ragga—ragga—"

"They called her a little blue raggamuffin, father," said Harry, who ran in looking very angry; "but I have given it to them, they won't⁵⁶⁵⁰ insult my sister again. I have given them a thrashing they will remember; a set of cowardly, rascally, orange blackguards!"

Jerry kissed the child and said, "Run in to mother, my pet, and tell her I think you had bet-⁵⁶⁵⁵ter stay at home to-day and help her."

Then turning gravely to Harry—

"My boy, I hope you will always defend your sister, and give anybody who insults her a good thrashing—that is as it should be; but mind, I⁵⁶⁶⁰ won't have any election blackguarding on my premises. There are as many blue blackguards as there are orange, and as many white as there are purple, or any other color, and I won't have any of my family mixed up with it. Even women⁵⁶⁶⁵ and children are ready to quarrel for the sake of a color, and not one in ten of them knows what it is about."

"Why, father, I thought blue was for Liberty."

"My boy, Liberty does not come from colors,⁵⁶⁷⁰ they only show party, and all the liberty you can

get out of them is, liberty to get drunk at other people's expense, liberty to ride to the poll in a dirty old cab, liberty to abuse any one that does
5675 not wear your color, and to shout yourself hoarse at what you only half understand — that's your liberty!"

"Oh, father, you are laughing."

"No, Harry, I am serious, and I am ashamed
5680 to see how men go on that ought to know better. An election is a very serious thing; at least it ought to be, and every man ought to vote according to his conscience, and let his neighbor do the same."



CHAPTER XLIII.

A FRIEND IN NEED

AT last came the election day; there was no⁵⁶⁸⁵ lack of work for Jerry and me. First came a stout puffy gentleman with a carpet bag; he wanted to go to the Bishopsgate Station: then we were called by a party who wished to be taken to the Regent's Park; and next we were wanted⁵⁶⁹⁰ in a side street where a timid, anxious old lady was waiting to be taken to the bank: there we had to stop to take her back again, and just as we had set her down, a red-faced gentleman with a handful of papers, came running up out of breath,⁵⁶⁹⁵ and before Jerry could get down, he had opened the door, popped himself in, and called out "Bow Street Police Station, quick!" so off we went with him, and when after another turn or two we came back, there was no other cab on the stand. Jerry⁵⁷⁰⁰ put on my nose-bag, for as he said, "We must eat when we can on such days as these; so munch away, Jack, and make the best of your time, old boy."

I found I had a good feed of crushed oats⁵⁷⁰⁵ wetted up with a little bran; this would be a treat any day, but was specially refreshing then. Jerry was so thoughtful and kind—what horse would not do his best for such a master? Then

5710 he took out one of Polly's meat pies, and standing near me, he began to eat it. The streets were very full, and the cabs with the Candidates' colors on them, were dashing about through the crowd as if life and limb were of no consequence; 5715 we saw two people knocked down that day, and one was a woman. The horses were having a bad time of it, poor things! but the voters inside thought nothing of that, many of them were half drunk, hurrahing out of the cab windows if their 5720 own party came by. It was the first election I had seen, and I don't want to be in another, though I have heard things are better now.

Jerry and I had not eaten many mouthfuls, before a poor young woman, carrying a heavy 5725 child, came along the street. She was looking this way, and that way, and seemed quite bewildered. Presently she made her way up to Jerry, and asked if he could tell her the way to St. Thomas' Hospital, and how far it was to get there. 5730 She had come from the country that morning, she said, in a market cart; she did not know about the election, and was quite a stranger in London. She had got an order for the Hospital for her little boy. The child was crying with a feeble pining cry.

5735 "Poor little fellow!" she said, "he suffers a deal of pain; he is four years old, and can't walk any more than a baby; but the doctor said if I could get him into the Hospital, he might get well; pray, sir, how far is it? and which way is it?"

5740 "Why, missis," said Jerry, "you can't get

there walking through crowds like this! Why, it is three miles away, and that child is heavy."

"Yes, bless him, he is, but I am strong, thank God, and if I knew the way, I think I should get on somehow; please tell me the way."

5745

"You can't do it," said Jerry, "you might be knocked down and the child be run over. Now, look here, just get into this cab, and I'll drive you safe to the Hospital: don't you see the rain is coming on?"

5750

"No, sir, no, I can't do that, thank you, I have only just money enough to get back with. Please tell me the way."

"Look you here, missis," said Jerry, "I've got a wife and dear children at home, and I know a father's feelings. Now get you into that cab, and I'll take you there for nothing; I'd be ashamed of myself to let a woman and a sick child run a risk like that."

5755

"Heaven bless you!" said the woman, and burst into tears.

5760

"There, there, cheer up, my dear, I'll soon take you there; come, let me put you inside."

As Jerry went to open the door, two men, with colors in their hats and button-holes, ran up, calling out, "Cab!"

5765

"Engaged," cried Jerry; but one of the men, pushing past the woman, sprang into the cab, followed by the other. Jerry looked as stern as a policeman: "This cab is already engaged, gentlemen, by that lady."

5770

"Lady!" said one of them; "oh! she can wait; our business is very important, besides we were in first, it is our right, and we shall stay in."

5775 A droll smile came over Jerry's face as he shut the door upon them. "All right, gentlemen, pray stay in as long as it suits you: I can wait whilst you rest yourselves;" and turning his back upon them he walked up to the young woman, who



"We stopped, and a lady came down the steps"

5780 was standing near me. "They'll soon be gone," he said, laughing, "don't trouble yourself, my dear."

And they soon were gone, for when they understood Jerry's dodge, they got out, calling him all sorts of bad names, and blustering about his number, and getting a summons. After this
5785 little stoppage we were soon on our way to the Hospital, going as much as possible through by-streets. Jerry rung the great bell, and helped the young woman out.

"Thank you a thousand times," she said; "I ⁵⁷⁹⁰ could never have got here alone."

"You're kindly welcome, and I hope the dear child will soon be better."

He watched her go in at the door, and gently he said to himself, "Inasmuch as ye have done it ⁵⁷⁹⁵ to one of the least of these." Then he patted my neck, which was always his way when anything pleased him.

The rain was now coming down fast and just as we were leaving the Hospital, the door opened ⁵⁸⁰⁰ again, and the porter called out, "Cab!" We stopped, and a lady came down the steps. Jerry seemed to know her at once; she put back her veil and said, "Barker! Jeremiah Barker! is it you? I am very glad to find you here; you are ⁵⁸⁰⁵ just the friend I want, for it is very difficult to get a cab in this part of London to-day."

"I shall be proud to serve you, ma'am, I am right glad I happened to be here; where may I take you to, ma'am?" 5810

"To the Paddington Station, and then if we are in good time, as I think we shall be, you shall tell me all about Mary and the children."

We got to the station in good time, and being under shelter, the lady stood a good while talking to Jerry. I found she had been Polly's mistress, and after many enquiries about her, she said —

"How do you find the cab-work suit you in winter? I know Mary was rather anxious about you last year." 5820

"Yes, ma'am, she was; I had a bad cough that followed me up quite into the warm weather, and when I am kept out late, she does worry herself a good deal. You see, ma'am, it is all hours and
5835 all weathers, and that does try a man's constitution; but I am getting on pretty well, and I should feel quite lost if I had not horses to look after. I was brought up to it, and I am afraid I should not do so well at anything else."

5840 "Well, Barker," she said, "it would be a great pity that you should seriously risk your health in this work, not only for your own, but for Mary and the children's sake: there are many places where good drivers or good grooms are wanted;
5835 and if ever you think you ought to give up this cab-work, let me know." Then sending some kind messages to Mary, she put something into his hand, saying, "There is five shillings each for the two children; Mary will know how to
5840 spend it."

Jerry thanked her and seemed much pleased, and turning out of the station, we at last reached home, and I, at least, was tired.



CHAPTER XLIV.

OLD CAPTAIN AND HIS SUCCESSOR

CAPTAIN and I were great friends. He was a noble old fellow, and he was very ⁵⁸⁴⁵ good company. I never thought that he would have to leave his home and go down the hill, but his turn came; and this was how it happened. I was not there, but I heard all about it.

He and Jerry had taken a party to the great ⁵⁸⁵⁰ railway station over London Bridge, and were coming back, somewhere between the Bridge and the Monument, when Jerry saw a brewer's empty dray coming along, drawn by two powerful horses. The drayman was lashing his horses ⁵⁸⁵⁵ with his heavy whip; the dray was light, and they started off at a furious rate; the man had no control over them, and the street was full of traffic; one young girl was knocked down and run over, and the next moment they dashed up ⁵⁸⁶⁰ against our cab; both the wheels were torn off, and the cab was thrown over. Captain was dragged down, the shafts splintered, and one of them ran into his side. Jerry too was thrown, but was only bruised; nobody could tell how he ⁵⁸⁶⁵ escaped, he always said 'twas a miracle. When poor Captain was got up, he was found to be very much cut and knocked about. Jerry led him

[241]

home gently, and a sad sight it was to see the
3870 blood soaking into his white coat, and dropping
from his side and shoulder. The drayman was
proved to be very drunk, and was fined, and
the brewer had to pay damages to our master ;
but there was no one to pay damages to poor
5875 Captain.

The farrier and Jerry did the best they could
to ease his pain, and make him comfortable. The
fly had to be mended, and for several days I did
not go out, and Jerry earned nothing. The first
5880 time we went to the stand after the accident, the
Governor came up to hear how Captain was.

"He'll never get over it," said Jerry, "at least
not for my work, so the farrier said this morn-
ing. He says he may do for carting, and that sort
5885 of work. It has put me out very much. Carting
indeed! I've seen what horses come to at that
work round London. I only wish all the drunk-
ards could be put in a lunatic asylum, instead of
being allowed to run foul of sober people. If
5890 they would break their *own* bones, and smash
their *own* carts, and lame their *own* horses, that
would be their own affair, and we might let them
alone, but it seems to me that the innocent
always suffer; and then they talk about compen-
5895 sation! You can't make compensation—there's
all the trouble, and vexation, and loss of time,
besides losing a good horse that's like an old
friend—it's nonsense talking of compensation!
If there's one devil that I should like to see in

the bottomless pit more than another, it's the ⁵⁹⁰⁰ drink devil."

"I say, Jerry," said the Governor, "you are treading pretty hard on my toes, you know; I'm not so good as you are, more shame for me, I wish I was." ⁵⁹⁰⁵

"Well," said Jerry, "why don't you cut with it, Governor? you are too good a man to be the slave of such a thing."

"I'm a great fool, Jerry, but I tried once for two days, and I thought I should have died; how ⁵⁹¹⁰ did you do?"

"I had hard work at it for several weeks; you see, I never did get drunk, but I found that I was not my own master, and that when the craving came on, it was hard work to say 'no.' I saw ⁵⁹¹⁵ that one of us must knock under—the drink devil, or Jerry Barker, and I said that it should not be Jerry Barker, God helping me: but it was a struggle, and I wanted all the help I could get, for till I tried to break the habit, I did not know ⁵⁹²⁰ how strong it was; but then Polly took such pains that I should have good food, and when the craving came on, I used to get a cup of coffee, or some peppermint, or read a bit in my book, and that was a help to me. Sometimes I had to say ⁵⁹²⁵ over and over to myself, 'Give up the drink or lose your soul? Give up the drink or break Polly's heart?' But thanks be to God, and my dear wife, my chains were broken, and now for ten years I have not tasted a drop, and never wish for it." ⁵⁹³⁰

"I've a great mind to try at it," said Grant, "for 'tis a poor thing not to be one's own master."

"Do, Governor, do, you'll never repent it, and what a help it would be to some of the poor
5935 fellows in our rank if they saw you do without it. I know there's two or three would like to keep out of that tavern if they could."

At first Captain seemed to do well, but he was a very old horse, and it was only his wonderful
5940 constitution, and Jerry's care, that had kept him up at the cab-work so long; now he broke down very much. The farrier said he might mend up enough to sell for a few pounds, but Jerry said, no! a few pounds got by selling a good old
5945 servant into hard work and misery, would canker all the rest of his money, and he thought the kindest thing he could do for the fine old fellow would be to put a sure bullet through his heart, and then he would never suffer more; for he did
5950 not know where to find a kind master for the rest of his days.

The day after this was decided, Harry took me to the forge for some new shoes; when I returned, Captain was gone. I and the family all
5955 felt it very much.

Jerry had now to look out for another horse, and he soon heard of one through an acquaintance who was under-groom in a nobleman's stables. He was a valuable young horse, but
5960 he had run away, smashed into another carriage, flung his lordship out, and so cut and blemished

himself that he was no longer fit for a gentleman's stables, and the coachman had orders to look round, and sell him as well as he could.

"I can do with high spirits," said Jerry, "if a horse is not vicious or hard-mouthed."

"There is not a bit of vice in him," said the man, "his mouth is very tender, and I think myself, that was the cause of the accident; you see he had just been clipped, and the weather was bad, and he had not had exercise enough, and when he did go out, he was as full of spring as a balloon. Our governor (the coachman, I mean) had him harnessed in as tight and strong as he could, with the martingale, and the bearing rein, a very sharp curb, and the reins put in at the bottom bar; it is my belief that it made the horse mad, being tender in the mouth and so full of spirit."

"Likely enough; I'll come and see him," said Jerry.

The next day, Hotspur — that was his name — came home; he was a fine brown horse, without a white hair in him, as tall as Captain, with a very handsome head, and only five years old. I gave him a friendly greeting by way of good fellowship, but did not ask him any questions. The first night he was very restless; instead of lying down, he kept jerking his halter rope up and down through the ring, and knocking the block about against the manger so that I could not sleep. However, the next day, after five or six

hours in the cab, he came in quiet and sensible. Jerry patted and talked to him a good deal, and
5995 very soon they understood each other, and Jerry said that with an easy bit, and plenty of work, he would be as gentle as a lamb; and that it was an ill wind that blew nobody good, for if his lordship had lost a hundred-guinea favorite, the
6000 cabman had gained a good horse with all his strength in him.

Hotspur thought it a great come-down to be a cab horse, and was disgusted at standing in the rank, but he confessed to me at the end of the
6005 week, that an easy mouth, and a free head, made up for a great deal, and after all, the work was not so degrading as having one's head and tail fastened to each other at the saddle. In fact, he settled in well, and Jerry liked him very much.



CHAPTER XLV.

JERRY'S NEW YEAR

CHRISTMAS and the New Year are very ⁰⁰¹⁰ merry times for some people; but for cabmen and cabmen's horses, it is no holiday, though it may be a harvest. There are so many parties, balls, and places of amusement open, that the work is hard and often late. Sometimes ⁰⁰¹⁵ driver and horse have to wait for hours in the rain or frost, shivering with cold, whilst the merry people within are dancing away to the music. I wonder if the beautiful ladies ever think of the weary cabman waiting on his box, ⁰⁰²⁰ and his patient beast standing, till his legs get stiff with cold.

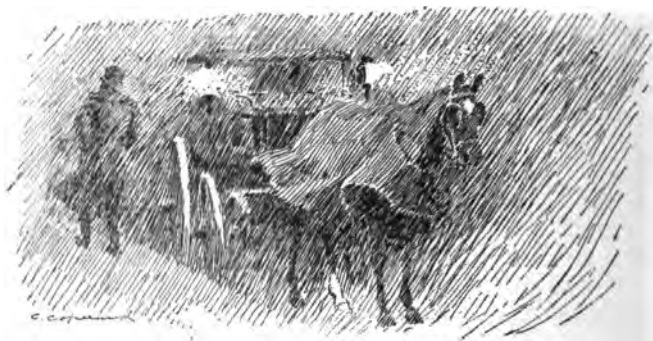
I had now most of the evening work, as I was well accustomed to standing, and Jerry was also more afraid of Hotspur taking cold. We had a ⁰⁰²⁵ great deal of late work in the Christmas week, and Jerry's cough was bad; but however late we were, Polly sat up for him, and came out with the lantern to meet him, looking anxious and troubled. 0030

On the evening of the New Year, we had to take two gentlemen to a house in one of the West End Squares. We set them down at nine o'clock and were told to come again at eleven,

0085 "But," said one of them, "as it is a card party, you may have to wait a few minutes, but don't be late."

As the clock struck eleven we were at the door, for Jerry was always punctual. The clock
0090 chimed the quarters—one, two, three, and then struck twelve, but the door did not open.

The wind had been very changeable, with squalls of rain during the day, but now it came on sharp driving sleet, which seemed to come all



"It was very cold, and there was no shelter"

0095 the way round; it was very cold, and there was no shelter. Jerry got off his box and came and pulled one of my cloths a little more over my neck; then he took a turn or two up and down, stamping his feet; then he began to beat his
0100 arms, but that set him off coughing; so he opened the cab door and sat at the bottom with his feet on the pavement, and was a little sheltered. Still the clock chimed the quarters, and

no one came. At half-past twelve, he rang the bell and asked the servant if he would be wanted that night. 0058

"Oh! yes, you'll be wanted safe enough," said the man, "you must not go, it will soon be over," and again Jerry sat down, but his voice was so hoarse I could hardly hear him. 0060

At a quarter past one the door opened, and the two gentlemen came out; they got into the cab without a word, and told Jerry where to drive, that was nearly two miles. My legs were numb with cold, and I thought I should have stumbled. 0065 When the men got out, they never said they were sorry to have kept us waiting so long, but were angry at the charge; however, as Jerry never charged more than was his due, so he never took less, and they had to pay for the two hours and a quarter waiting; but it was hard-earned money to Jerry. 0070

At last we got home; he could hardly speak, and his cough was dreadful. Polly asked no questions, but opened the door and held the lantern for him. 0075

"Can't I do something?" she said.

"Yes, get Jack something warm, and then boil me some gruel."

This was said in a hoarse whisper; he could hardly get his breath, but he gave me a rub down as usual, and even went up into the hayloft for an extra bundle of straw for my bed. Polly brought me a warm mash that made me comfortable, and then they locked the door. 0080

6085 It was late the next morning before any one came, and then it was only Harry. He cleaned us and fed us, and swept out the stalls, then he put the straw back again as if it was Sunday. He was very still, and neither whistled nor sang. At
6090 noon he came again and gave us our food and water: this time Dolly came with him; she was crying, and I could gather from what they said, that Jerry was dangerously ill, and the doctor said it was a bad case. So two days passed, and there
6095 was great trouble indoors. We only saw Harry, and sometimes Dolly. I think she came for company, for Polly was always with Jerry, and he had to be kept very quiet.

On the third day, whilst Harry was in the
6100 stable, a tap came at the door, and Governor Grant came in.

"I wouldn't go to the house, my boy," he said, "but I want to know how your father is."

"He is very bad," said Harry, "he can't be
6105 much worse; they call it 'bronchitis'; the doctor thinks it will turn one way or another to-night."

"That's bad, very bad," said Grant, shaking his head; "I know two men who died of that last week; it takes 'em off in no time; but whilst
6110 there's life there's hope, so you must keep up your spirits."

"Yes," said Harry quickly, "and the doctor said that father had a better chance than most men, because he didn't drink. He said yester-
6115 day the fever was so high, that if father had been

a drinking man, it would have burnt him up like a piece of paper; but I believe he thinks he will get over it; don't you think he will, Mr. Grant?"

The Governor looked puzzled.

"If there's any rule that good men should get ⁶¹²⁰ over these things, I am sure he will, my boy; he's the best man I know. I'll look in early to-morrow."

Early next morning he was there.

"Well?" said he.

"Father is better," said Harry. "Mother hopes ⁶¹²⁵ he will get over it."

"Thank God!" said the Governor, "and now you must keep him warm, and keep his mind easy, and that brings me to the horses; you see, Jack will be all the better for the rest of a week ⁶¹³⁰ or two in a warm stable, and you can easily take him a turn up and down the street to stretch his legs; but this young one, if he does not get work, he will soon be all up on end, as you may say, and will be rather too much for you; and when ⁶¹³⁵ he does go out, there'll be an accident."

"It is like that now," said Harry, "I have kept him short of corn, but he's so full of spirit I don't know what to do with him."

"Just so," said Grant. "Now look here, will ⁶¹⁴⁰ you tell your mother that if she is agreeable, I will come for him every day till something is arranged, and take him for a good spell of work, and whatever he earns, I'll bring your mother half of it, and that will help with the horses' feed. Your ⁶¹⁴⁵ father is in a good club, I know, but that won't

keep the horses, and they'll be eating their heads off all this time. I'll come at noon and hear what she says," and without waiting for Harry's thanks, 6150 he was gone.

At noon I think he went and saw Polly, for he and Harry came to the stable together, harnessed Hotspur and took him out.

For a week or more he came for Hotspur, and 6155 when Harry thanked him or said anything about his kindness, he laughed it off, saying, it was all good luck for him, for his horses were wanting a little rest which they would not otherwise have had.

Jerry grew better, steadily, but the doctor said 6160 that he must never go back to the cab-work again if he wished to be an old man. The children had many consultations together about what father and mother would do, and how they could help to earn money.

6165 One afternoon, Hotspur was brought in very wet and dirty.

"The streets are nothing but slush," said the Governor; "it will give you a good warming, my boy, to get him clean and dry."

6170 "All right, Governor," said Harry, "I shall not leave him till he is; you know I have been trained by my father."

"I wish all the boys had been trained like you," said the Governor.

6175 While Harry was sponging off the mud from Hotspur's body and legs, Dolly came in, looking very full of something.

"Who lives at Fairstowe, Harry? Mother has got a letter from Fairstowe; she seemed so glad, and ran upstairs to father with it." 6180

"Don't you know? Why, it is the name of Mrs. Fowler's place—mother's old mistress, you know—the lady that father met last summer, who sent you and me five shillings each."

"Oh! Mrs. Fowler; of course I know all about 6185 her. I wonder what she is writing to mother about."

"Mother wrote to her last week," said Harry; "you know she told father if ever he gave up the cab-work, she would like to know. I wonder 6190 what she says; run in and see, Dolly."

Harry scrubbed away at Hotspur with a huish! huish! like any old ostler.

In a few minutes Dolly came dancing into the stable. 6195

"Oh! Harry, there never was anything so beautiful; Mrs. Fowler says, we are all to go and live near her. There is a cottage now empty that will just suit us, with a garden, and a hen house, and apple trees, and everything! and her coach- 6200 man is going away in the spring, and then she will want father in his place; and there are good families round, where you can get a place in the garden, or the stable, or as a page boy; and there's a good school for me; and mother is laughing and 6205 crying by turns, and father does look so happy!"

"That's uncommon jolly," said Harry "and just the right thing, I should say; it will suit

father and mother both ; but I don't intend to be
6210 a page boy with tight clothes and rows of buttons.
I'll be a groom or a gardener."

It was quickly settled that as soon as Jerry was well enough, they should remove to the country, and that the cab and horses should be
6215 sold as soon as possible.

This was heavy news for me, for I was not young now, and could not look for any improvement in my condition. Since I left Birtwick I had never been so happy as with my dear master,
6220 Jerry ; but three years of cab-work, even under the best conditions, will tell on one's strength, and I felt that I was not the horse that I had been.

Grant said at once that he would take Hotspur ; and there were men on the stand who
6225 would have bought me ; but Jerry said I should not go to cab-work again with just anybody, and the Governor promised to find a place for me where I should be comfortable.

The day came for going away. Jerry had not
6230 been allowed to go out yet, and I never saw him after that New Year's Eve. Polly and the children came to bid me good-by. "Poor old Jack! dear old Jack! I wish we could take you with us," she said, and then, laying her hand on my
6235 mane, she put her face close to my neck and kissed me. Dolly was crying and kissed me too. Harry stroked me a great deal, but said nothing, only he seemed very sad, and so I was led away to my new place.

PART IV.

CHAPTER XLVI.

JAKES AND THE LADY

I WAS sold to a corn dealer and baker, whom⁶²⁴⁰ Jerry knew, and with him he thought I should have good food and fair work. In the first he was quite right, and if my master had always been on the premises, I do not think I should have been overloaded, but there was a⁶²⁴⁵ foreman who was always hurrying and driving every one, and frequently when I had quite a full load, he would order something else to be taken on. My carter, whose name was Jakes, often said it was more than I ought to take, but the⁶²⁵⁰ other always overruled him: "'Twas no use going twice when once would do, and he chose to get business forward."

Jakes, like the other carters, always had the bearing rein up, which prevented me from draw-⁶²⁵⁵ing easily, and by the time I had been there three or four months, I found the work telling very much on my strength.

One day, I was loaded more than usual, and part of the road was a steep uphill. I used all my strength, but I could not get on, and was obliged⁶²⁶⁰ continually to stop. This did not please my

driver, and he laid his whip on badly. "Get on, you lazy fellow," he said, "or I'll make you."

6265 Again I started the heavy load, and struggled on a few yards; again the whip came down, and again I struggled forward. The pain of that great cart whip was sharp, but my mind was hurt quite as much as my poor sides. To be punished
6270 and abused when I was doing my very best was so hard, it took the heart out of me. A third



"Again I started the heavy load, and struggled on a few yards"

time he was flogging me cruelly when a lady stepped quickly up to him, and said in a sweet, earnest voice —

6275 "Oh! pray do not whip your good horse any more; I am sure he is doing all he can, and the road is very steep, I am sure he is doing his best."

"If doing his best won't get this load up, he must do something more than his best; that's all
6280 I know, ma'am," said Jakes.

"But is it not a very heavy load?" she said.

"Yes, yes, too heavy," he said, "but that's

not my fault, the foreman came just as we were starting, and would have three hundredweight more put on to save him trouble, and I must get on with it as well as I can."

He was raising the whip again, when the lady said —

"Pray, stop, I think I can help you if you will let me."

6290

The man laughed.

"You see," she said, "you do not give him a fair chance; he cannot use all his power with his head held back as it is with that bearing rein; if you would take it off, I am sure he would do better — *do* try it," she said persuasively, "I should be very glad if you would."

"Well, well," said Jakes, with a short laugh, "anything to please a lady of course. How far would you wish it down, ma'am?"

6300

"Quite down, give him his head altogether."

The rein was taken off, and in a moment I put my head down to my very knees. What a comfort it was! Then I tossed it up and down several times to get the aching stiffness out of my neck.

6305

"Poor fellow! that is what you wanted," said she, patting and stroking me with her gentle hand; "and now if you will speak kindly to him and lead him on, I believe he will be able to do better."

6310

Jakes took the rein—"Come on, Blackie." I put down my head, and threw my whole weight against the collar; I spared no strength; the

load moved on, and I pulled it steadily up the
6315 hill, and then stopped to take breath.

The lady had walked along the footpath, and now came across into the road. She stroked and patted my neck, as I had not been patted for many a long day.

6320 "You see he was quite willing when you gave him the chance; I am sure he is a fine-tempered creature, and I dare say has known better days. You won't put that rein on again, will you?" for he was just going to hitch it up on the old plan.

6325 "Well, ma'am, I can't deny that having his head has helped him up the hill, and I'll remember it another time, and thank you, ma'am; but if he went without a bearing rein, I should be the laughing stock of all the carters; it is the fashion,
6330 you see."

"Is it not better," she said, "to lead a good fashion, than to follow a bad one? A great many gentlemen do not use bearing reins now; our carriage horses have not worn them for fifteen
6335 years, and work with much less fatigue than those who have them; besides," she added in a very serious voice, "we have no right to distress any of God's creatures without a very good reason; we call them dumb animals, and so they
6340 are, for they cannot tell us how they feel, but they do not suffer less because they have no words. But I must not detain you now; I thank you for trying my plan with your good horse and I am sure you will find it far better than the

whip. Good day," and with another soft pat on ⁶³⁴⁵ my neck, she stepped lightly across the path, and I saw her no more.

"That was a real lady, I'll be bound for it," said Jakes to himself; "she spoke just as polite as if I was a gentleman, and I'll try her plan, ⁶³⁵⁰ uphill, at any rate;" and I must do him the justice to say, that he let my rein out several holes, and going uphill after that, he always gave me my head; but the heavy loads went on. Good feed and fair rest will keep up one's strength ⁶³⁵⁵ under full work, but no horse can stand against overloading; and I was getting so thoroughly pulled down from this cause, that a younger horse was bought in my place. I may as well mention here, what I suffered at this time from another ⁶³⁶⁰ cause. I had heard horses speak of it, but had never myself had experience of the evil; this was a badly-lighted stable; there was only one very small window at the end, and the consequence was that the stalls were almost dark. ⁶³⁶⁵

Besides the depressing effect this had on my spirits, it very much weakened my sight, and when I was suddenly brought out of the darkness into the glare of daylight, it was very painful to my eyes. Several times I stumbled over the ⁶³⁷⁰ threshold, and could scarcely see where I was going.

I believe, had I stayed there very long, I should have become purblind, and that would have been a great misfortune, for I have heard ⁶³⁷⁵

men say, that a stone-blind horse was safer to drive than one which had imperfect sight, as it generally makes them very timid. However, I escaped without any permanent injury to my sight, and was sold to a large cab owner.



CHAPTER XLVII.

HARD TIMES

I SHALL never forget my new master; he had black eyes and a hooked nose, his mouth was as full of teeth as a bull-dog's, and his voice was as harsh as the grinding of cart wheels over gravel stones. His name was Nicholas Skinner, 6385 and I believe he was the same man that poor Seedy Sam drove for.

I have heard men say, that seeing is believing; but I should say that *feeling* is believing; for much as I had seen before, I never knew till now 6390 the utter misery of a cab-horse's life.

Skinner had a low set of cabs and a low set of drivers; he was hard on the men, and the men were hard on the horses. In this place we had no Sunday rest, and it was in the heat of summer. 6395

Sometimes on a Sunday morning, a party of fast men would hire the cab for the day; four of them inside and another with the driver, and I had to take them ten or fifteen miles out into the country and back again. Never would any of 6400 them get down to walk up a hill, let it be ever so steep, or the day ever so hot—unless indeed, when the driver was afraid I should not manage it, and sometimes I was so fevered and worn that I could hardly touch my food. How I used to 6405 long for the nice bran mash with nitre in it that

Jerry used to give us on Saturday nights in hot weather, that used to cool us down and make us so comfortable. Then we had two nights and a whole day for unbroken rest, and on Monday morning we were as fresh as young horses again; but here, there was no rest, and my driver was just as hard as his master. He had a cruel whip with something so sharp at the end that it sometimes drew blood, and he would even whip me under the belly, and flip the lash out at my head. Indignities like these took the heart out of me terribly, but still I did my best and never hung back; for, as poor Ginger said, it was no use; men are the strongest.

My life was now so utterly wretched, that I wished I might, like Ginger, drop down dead at my work, and be out of my misery; and one day my wish very nearly came to pass.

I went on the stand at eight in the morning, and had done a good share of work, when we had to take a fare to the railway. A long train was just expected in, so my driver pulled up at the back of some of the outside cabs, to take the chance of a return fare. It was a very heavy train, and as all the cabs were soon engaged, ours was called for. There was a party of four; a noisy, blustering man with a lady, a little boy, and a young girl, and a great deal of luggage. The lady and the boy got into the cab, and while the man ordered about the luggage, the young girl came and looked at me.

"Papa," she said, "I am sure this poor horse cannot take us and all our luggage so far, he is so very weak and worn out; do look at him." 6440

"Oh! he's all right, miss," said my driver, "he's strong enough."

The porter, who was pulling about some heavy boxes, suggested to the gentleman, as there was so much luggage, whether he would not take a 6445 second cab.

"Can your horse do it, or can't he?" said the blustering man.

"Oh! he can do it all right, sir; send up the boxes, porter; he could take more than that," 6450 and he helped to haul up a box so heavy that I could feel the springs go down.

"Papa, papa, do take a second cab," said the young girl in a beseeching tone; "I am sure we are wrong, I am sure it is very cruel." 6455

"Nonsense, Grace, get in at once, and don't make all this fuss; a pretty thing it would be if a man of business had to examine every cab-horse before he hired it—the man knows his own business of course; there, get in and hold 6460 your tongue!"

My gentle friend had to obey; and box after box was dragged up and lodged on the top of the cab, or settled by the side of the driver. At last all was ready, and with his usual jerk at the rein, 6465 and slash of the whip, he drove out of the station.

The load was very heavy, and I had had neither food nor rest since the morning; but I did

my best, as I always had done, in spite of cruelty
and injustice.

I got along fairly till we came to Ludgate Hill, but there, the heavy load and my own exhaustion were too much. I was struggling to keep on, goaded by constant chucks of the rein and use of the whip, when, in a single moment—I cannot tell how—my feet slipped from under me, and I fell heavily to the ground on my side; the sud-



"I lay perfectly still; indeed, I had no power to move"

denness and the force with which I fell seemed to beat all the breath out of my body. I lay perfectly still; indeed, I had no power to move, and I thought now I was going to die. I heard a sort of confusion round me, loud angry voices, and the getting down of the luggage, but it was all like a dream. I thought I heard that sweet pitiful voice saying, "Oh! that poor horse! it is all our fault." Some one came and loosened the

throat strap of my bridle, and undid the traces which kept the collar so tight upon me. Some one said, "He's dead, he'll never get up again." Then I could hear a policeman giving orders, but ⁶⁴⁹⁰ I did not even open my eyes; I could only draw a gasping breath now and then. Some cold water was thrown over my head, and some cordial was poured into my mouth, and something was covered over me. I cannot tell how long I ⁶⁴⁹⁵ lay there, but I found my life coming back, and a kind-voiced man was patting me and encouraging me to rise. After some more cordial had been given me, and after one or two attempts, I staggered to my feet, and was gently led to some ⁶⁵⁰⁰ stables which were close by. Here I was put into a well-littered stall, and some warm gruel was brought to me, which I drank thankfully.

In the evening I was sufficiently recovered to be led back to Skinner's stables, where I think ⁶⁵⁰⁵ they did the best for me they could. In the morning Skinner came with a farrier to look at me. He examined me very closely, and said—

"This is a case of overwork more than disease, and if you could give him a run off for six months, ⁶⁵¹⁰ he would be able to work again; but now there is not an ounce of strength in him."

"Then he must just go to the dogs," said Skinner, "I have no meadows to nurse sick horses in—he might get well or he might not; that sort ⁶⁵¹⁵ of thing don't suit my business, my plan is to work 'em as long as they'll go, and then sell 'em

for what they'll fetch at the knacker's or elsewhere."

6520 "If he was broken-winded," said the farrier, "you had better have him killed out of hand, but he is not; there is a sale of horses coming off in about ten days; if you rest him and feed him up, he may pick up, and you may get more than his
6525 skin is worth, at any rate."

Upon this advice, Skinner rather unwillingly, I think, gave orders that I should be well fed and cared for, and the stable man, happily for me, carried out the orders with a much better
6530 will than his master had in giving them. Ten days of perfect rest, plenty of good oats, hay, bran mashes, with boiled linseed mixed in them, did more to get up my condition than anything else could have done; those linseed mashes were
6535 delicious, and I began to think, after all, it might be better to live than go to the dogs. When the twelfth day after the accident came, I was taken to the sale, a few miles out of London. I felt that any change from my present place must be
6540 an improvement, so I held up my head, and hoped for the best.



CHAPTER XLVIII.

FARMER THOROUGHGOOD AND HIS GRANDSON WILLIE

AT this sale, of course I found myself in company with the old broken-down horses—some lame, some broken-winded, some old, and some that I am sure it would have been ⁶⁵⁴⁵merciful to shoot.

The buyers and sellers too, many of them, looked not much better off than the poor beasts they were bargaining about. There were poor old men, trying to get a horse or pony for a few ⁶⁵⁵⁰pounds, that might drag about some little wood or coal cart. There were poor men trying to sell a worn-out beast for two or three pounds, rather than have the greater loss of killing him. Some of them looked as if poverty and hard times had ⁶⁵⁵⁵hardened them all over; but there were others that I would have willingly used the last of my strength in serving; poor and shabby, but kind and human, with voices that I could trust. There was one tottering old man that took a great fancy ⁶⁵⁶⁰to me, and I to him, but I was not strong enough—it was an anxious time! Coming from the better part of the fair, I noticed a man who looked like a gentleman farmer, with a young boy by his side; he had a broad back and round ⁶⁵⁶⁵

shoulders, a kind, ruddy face, and he wore a broad-brimmed hat. When he came up to me and my companions, he stood still, and gave a pitiful look round upon us. I saw his eye rest
6570 on me; I had still a good mane and tail, which did something for my appearance. I pricked my ears and looked at him.

"There's a horse, Willie, that has known better days."

6575 "Poor old fellow!" said the boy, "do you think, grandpapa, he was ever a carriage horse?"

"Oh, yes! my boy," said the farmer, coming closer, "he might have been anything when he was young; look at his nostrils and his ears, the
6580 shape of his neck and shoulder; there's a deal of breeding about that horse." He put out his hand and gave me a kind pat on the neck. I put out my nose in answer to his kindness, the boy stroked my face.

6585 "Poor old fellow! see, grandpapa, how well he understands kindness. Could not you buy him and make him young again, as you did with Ladybird?"

"My dear boy, I can't make all old horses
6590 young; besides, Ladybird was not so very old, as she was run down and badly used."

"Well, grandpapa, I don't believe that this one is old; look at his mane and tail. I wish you would look into his mouth, and then you could
6595 tell; though he is so very thin, his eyes are not sunk like some old horses'."

The old gentleman laughed. "Bless the boy! he is as horsey as his old grandfather."

"But do look at his mouth, grandpapa, and ask the price; I am sure he would grow young in our meadows."

The man who had brought me for sale now put in his word.

"The young gentleman's a real knowing one, sir; now the fact is, this 'ere hoss is just pulled down with overwork in the cabs; he's not an old one, and I heerd as how the vetenary should say, that a six months' run off would set him right up, being as how his wind was not broken. I've had the tending of him these ten days past, and a gratefuller, pleasanter animal I never met with, and 'twould be worth a gentleman's while to give a five-pound note for him, and let him have a chance. I'll be bound he'd be worth twenty pounds next spring."

0615

The old gentleman laughed, and the little boy looked up eagerly.

"Oh! grandpapa, did you not say, the colt sold for five pounds more than you expected? you would not be poorer if you did buy this one."

0620

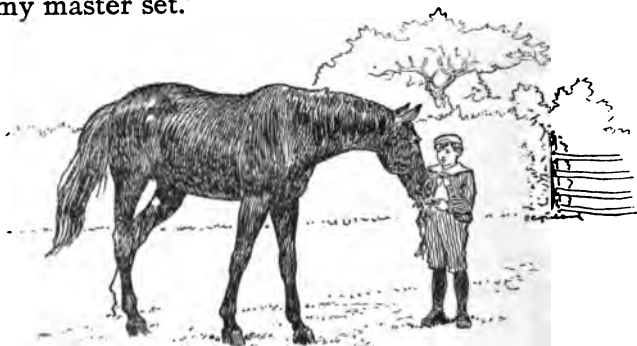
The farmer slowly felt my legs, which were much swelled and strained; then he looked at my mouth—"Thirteen or fourteen, I should say; just trot him out, will you?"

I arched my poor thin neck, raised my tail a little, and threw out my legs as well as I could, for they were very stiff.

0625

"What is the lowest you will take for him?" said the farmer as I came back.

6630 "Five pounds, sir; that was the lowest price my master set."



"Giving me a bit of carrot, or something good"

"'Tis a speculation," said the old gentleman, shaking his head, but at the same time slowly drawing out his purse—"quite a speculation!"
6635 Have you any more business here?" he said, counting the sovereigns into his hand.

"No, sir, I can take him for you to the inn, if you please."

"Do so, I am now going there."

6640 They walked forward, and I was led behind. The boy could hardly control his delight, and the old gentleman seemed to enjoy his pleasure. I had a good feed at the inn, and was then gently ridden home by a servant of my new master's and
6645 turned into a large meadow with a shed in one corner of it.

Mr. Thoroughgood, for that was the name of my benefactor, gave orders that I should have hay and oats every night and morning, and the run of the meadow during the day, and "you, ⁶⁶⁵⁰ Willie," said he, "must take the oversight of him; I give him in charge to you."

The boy was proud of his charge, and undertook it in all seriousness. There was not a day when he did not pay me a visit; sometimes pick-⁶⁶⁵⁵ing me out from amongst the other horses, and giving me a bit of carrot, or something good, or sometimes standing by me whilst I ate my oats. He always came with kind words and caresses, and of course I grew very fond of him. He called ⁶⁶⁶⁰ me Old Crony, as I used to come to him in the field and follow him about. Sometimes he brought his grandfather, who always looked closely at my legs —

"This is our point, Willie," he would say; "but ⁶⁶⁶⁵ he is improving so steadily that I think we shall see a change for the better in the spring."

The perfect rest, the good food, the soft turf, and gentle exercise, soon began to tell on my condition and my spirits. I had a good constitu-⁶⁶⁷⁰tion from my mother, and I was never strained when I was young, so that I had a better chance than many horses, who have been worked before they came to their full strength. During the winter my legs improved so much, that I began ⁶⁶⁷⁵ to feel quite young again. The spring came round, and one day in March, Mr. Thoroughgood

determined that he would try me in the phaeton. I was well pleased, and he and Willie drove me a few miles. My legs were not stiff now, and I did the work with perfect ease.

"He's growing young, Willie; we must give him a little gentle work now, and by midsummer he will be as good as Ladybird; he has a beautiful mouth, and good paces, they can't be better."

"Oh! grandpapa, how glad I am you bought him!"

"So am I, my boy, but he has to thank you more than me; we must now be looking out for a quiet, genteel place for him, where he will be valued."



CHAPTER XLIX.

MY LAST HOME

ONE day during this summer, the groom cleaned and dressed me with such extraordinary care, that I thought some new change must be at hand ; he trimmed my fetlocks ⁶⁶⁸⁵ and legs, passed the tarbrush over my hoofs, and even parted my forelock. I think the harness had an extra polish. Willie seemed half anxious, half merry, as he got into the chaise with his grandfather. 6700

"If the ladies take to him," said the old gentleman, "they'll be suited, and he'll be suited; we can but try."

At the distance of a mile or two from the village, we came to a pretty, low house, with ⁶⁷⁰⁵ a lawn and shrubbery at the front, and a drive up to the door. Willie rang the bell, and asked if Miss Blomefield, or Miss Ellen was at home. Yes, they were. So, whilst Willie stayed with me, Mr. Thoroughgood went into the house. In ⁶⁷¹⁰ about ten minutes he returned, followed by three ladies; one tall, pale lady, wrapped in a white shawl, leaned on a younger lady, with dark eyes and a merry face; the other, a very stately-looking person, was Miss Blomefield. They all came ⁶⁷¹⁵ and looked at me and asked questions. The

[273]

younger lady — that was Miss Ellen — took to me very much ; she said she was sure she should like me, I had such a good face. The tall, pale lady
6720 said that she should always be nervous in riding behind a horse that had once been down, as I might come down again, and if I did, she should never get over the fright.

“You see, ladies,” said Mr. Thoroughgood,
6725 “many first-rate horses have had their knees broken through the carelessness of their drivers, without any fault of their own, and from what I see of this horse, I should say, that is his case ; but of course I do not wish to influence you. If
6730 you incline, you can have him on trial, and then your coachman will see what he thinks of him.”

“You have always been such a good adviser to us about our horses,” said the stately lady, “that your recommendation would go a long
6735 way with me, and if my sister Lavinia sees no objection, we will accept your offer of a trial, with thanks.”

It was then arranged that I should be sent for the next day.

6740 In the morning a smart-looking young man came for me ; at first, he looked pleased ; but when he saw my knees, he said in a disappointed voice —

“I didn’t think, sir, you would have recom-
6745 mended my ladies a blemished horse like that.”

“Handsome is — that handsome does,” said my master ; “you are only taking him on trial,

and I am sure you will do fairly by him, young man, and if he is not as safe as any horse you ever drove, send him back."

6730



"*Why, Beauty! Beauty! do you know me?*"

I was led home, placed in a comfortable stable, fed, and left to myself. The next day, when my groom was cleaning my face, he said —

"That is just like the star that Black Beauty had, he is much the same height too; I wonder ⁶⁷³⁵ where he is now."

A little further on, he came to the place in my neck where I was bled, and where a little knot was left in the skin. He almost started, and began to look me over carefully, talking to ⁶⁷⁶⁰ himself.

"White star in the forehead, one white foot on the off side, this little knot just in that place;"

then looking at the middle of my back — “and as
6765 I am alive, there is that little patch of white hair
that John used to call ‘Beauty’s threepenny bit.’
It *must* be Black Beauty! Why, Beauty! Beauty!
do you know me? little Joe Green, that almost
killed you?” And he began patting and patting
6770 me as if he was quite overjoyed.

I could not say that I remembered him, for
now he was a fine grown young fellow, with
black whiskers and a man’s voice, but I was sure
he knew me, and that he was Joe Green, and I
6775 was very glad. I put my nose up to him, and
tried to say that we were friends. I never saw a
man so pleased.

“Give you a fair trial! I should think so
indeed! I wonder who the rascal was that broke
6780 your knees, my old Beauty! you must have been
badly served out somewhere; well, well, it won’t
be my fault if you haven’t good times of it now.
I wish John Manly was here to see you.”

In the afternoon I was put into a low Park
6785 chair and brought to the door. Miss Ellen was
going to try me, and Green went with her. I
soon found that she was a good driver, and she
seemed pleased with my paces. I heard Joe tell-
ing her about me, and that he was sure I was
6790 Squire Gordon’s old Black Beauty.

When we returned, the other sisters came out
to hear how I had behaved myself. She told
them what she had just heard, and said —

“I shall certainly write to Mrs. Gordon, and

tell her that her favorite horse has come to us. ⁶⁷⁹⁵
How pleased she will be!"

After this I was driven every day for a week or so, and as I appeared to be quite safe, Miss Lavinia at last ventured out in the small close carriage. After this it was quite decided to keep ⁶⁸⁰⁰ me and call me by my old name of "Black Beauty."

I have now lived in this happy place a whole year. Joe is the best and kindest of grooms. My work is easy and pleasant, and I feel my ⁶⁸⁰⁵ strength and spirits all coming back again. Mr. Thoroughgood said to Joe the other day—

"In your place he will last till he is twenty years old — perhaps more."

Willie always speaks to me when he can, and ⁶⁸¹⁰ treats me as his special friend. My ladies have promised that I shall never be sold, and so I have nothing to fear; and here my story ends. My troubles are all over, and I am at home; and often before I am quite awake, I fancy I am still ⁶⁸¹⁵ in the orchard at Birtwick, standing with my old friends under the apple trees.

THE END



A BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

ANNA SEWELL, the author of *Black Beauty*, was born in Yarmouth, England, March 30, 1820. Her ancestors had joined the Society of Friends in the time of George Fox, the founder of that great religious organization, and her family throughout succeeding generations exemplified all that was sweetest and noblest in the Quaker faith. Her mother was a philanthropist of wide influence and reputation, and an author who wrote both prose and poetry, but was most noted for the latter. Her ballad, "Mother's Last Words," describing the hard lot of two little London street-sweepers, had a sale of more than a million copies, while another of her simple tales in verse, "Our Father's Care," depicting the fortunes of an eight-year-old water-cress girl, ran up into hundreds of thousands.

Soon after Anna was born her father suffered financial reverses, which compelled him to remove to London, where he engaged in business, but again unsuccessfully. He then removed his family to a small country village and here they remained for nearly ten years. They were poor and were compelled to work hard, yet their life was by no means an unhappy one. The children, Anna, and Philip, her younger brother, were "workfellows and playfellows with their mother, and wished no greater happiness."

Love ruled the well-ordered household, and to

have a kiss withheld was the severest punishment to which the children could be subjected. They delighted in all the beauties of nature by which they were surrounded, but most of all they loved the birds and flowers and never tired of watching and caring for them. Their sympathies went out to dumb animals, and none ever suffered at their hands. Even moths and butterflies, whose habits and coloring they were always eager to observe, were never killed, but, if caught, were soon released.

One day a sportsman shot a blackbird, which fell in the front garden. The man came to the gate to get possession of it. Anna rushed to the door. With an obsequious smile the man said:

"If you please, Miss, will you let me take my bird?"

"No," she said, "thee cruel man, thee shan't have it at all."

Cruelty or oppression of any kind roused all their indignation.

Although their lot was full of hard work and privation, discontent and complaining never entered their doors, and their lives were always happy and cheerful, even when cruel suffering and disappointment came. The bright and active Anna was destined to a life of physical inactivity and pain. While she was yet a young girl, as she was returning from school one rainy day she slipped and fell, spraining her ankles. From this seemingly slight injury she never recovered, and much of the time was unable to move about at all.

But she never brooded over her loss of the amusements and companionships so dear to all right-minded girls. Though often confined to her

couch for months at a time she was always patient and industrious, and her room was bright and sunshiny with her smiles and her unselfish interest in the welfare of her friends. Her mother says in one of her letters, "She was an unclouded blessing, for fifty years the perennial joy of my life."

The idea of writing a book about horses seems to have gained definite shape in her mind one afternoon as she was driving a friend to the train. Mrs. Bayley tells the story as follows:¹

"When the carriage that was to take me to the station came to the door, Anna was standing in the hall, enveloped in a large mackintosh. The future writer of *Black Beauty* was to be my driver. I found that she and her mother were in the habit of driving out on most days, without attendance, the understanding between themselves and their horse being perfect. The persistent rain obliged us to keep up our umbrellas. Anna seemed simply to hold the reins in her hand, trusting to her voice to give all needed directions to her horse. She evidently believed in a horse having a moral nature, if we may judge by her mode of remonstrance. 'Now thee shouldn't walk up this hill—don't thee see how it rains?' 'Now thee must go a little faster—thee would be sorry for us to be late at the station.'

"I think it was during this drive that I told Anna something Horace Bushnell had written about animals. Soon after the publication of *Black Beauty* I had a little note from her, written from her sofa, in which she says: 'The thoughts you gave me years ago from Horace Bushnell

¹*Life and Letters of Mrs. Sewell*, page 249.

have followed me entirely through the writing of my book, and have, more than anything else, helped me to feel that it was worth a great effort to try, at least, to bring the thoughts of man more in harmony with the purposes of God on this subject.'"

The first mention of *Black Beauty* in her journal occurs under date of November 6, 1871: "I am writing the life of a horse, and getting dolls and boxes ready for Christmas."

No other entry on the subject occurs till December 6, 1876: "I am getting on with my little book, *Black Beauty*."

The next is dated August 21, 1877: "My first proofs of *Black Beauty* are come—very nice type."

Mrs. Bayley says: "It is touching to remember that this 'beautiful equine drama,' as it has been called, was thought out almost entirely from the sofa where so much weakness and pain were daily endured. When a time came during which she was capable of enduring the fatigue of writing, it was done in pencil—the mother, sitting by, received the paper from the weary hand and made a fair copy from it. That a book made in such a fragmentary way should 'show no joins' says much for the skill of the writer; but oh, what discipline must have been endured in having perpetually to 'leave off in the most interesting place!'"

Mrs. Sewell, her mother, in a letter to a friend says: "We are expecting every day the proofs of the school edition; we both have a great desire that it should become a reading-book in boys' schools. This also was the sanguine hope of its publisher, but his sudden death, just before its publication, has deprived it of his energetic aid."

"After all this about the book, I fancy you would be interested to know a little about the author. There is no doubt most people will have imagined her a robust young woman, mostly in the saddle with the reins in her hand. Instead of this, for the last seven years she has been confined either to her bed or couch, and has not in all that time passed beyond the garden gate. At the beginning of this time the subject of the book took root in her mind, and from time to time a few portions were dictated — reading or writing being equally impossible to her. Years went on and no progress was made except in her mind, where many pictures were clearly drawn and stored away in her memory.

"The year before last she was so far improved in strength as to be able to write in pencil her clearly arranged thoughts, I immediately making a fair copy. Her thoughts and pictures were the fruit of a previous experience. When a child she severely sprained both ankles, which ever after prevented her taking much walking exercise, and made riding and driving a necessity; and so it came to pass, between her and her own horse, and horses in general, a mutual confidence and friendship sprang up, and she learned all their secrets. She learned much through her ear, in this way quickly detecting if anything is wrong with a horse's foot, and through her eye at once if anything annoys them."

Black Beauty was published near the end of 1877, and its gentle author lived just long enough to hear of its remarkable success. Since that time its sales have been phenomenal. In 1894 more than a hundred thousand copies of the English

edition had been sold, and it had been translated into French, German, Italian, and Spanish, besides being printed in raised letters for the blind.

It was written with a feeble and weary hand, but it was destined to become a mighty power for good all over the civilized world. Countless numbers of horses have had their hard lots alleviated and their patient toil made easier because this suffering woman took up her pen in their behalf.

"She never went forth to sow.
But there rose from her lowly couch of pain
The fervent, pleading prayer:"—

"the prayer for happier men, happier horses, and happier homes, and that we might know how to use and not abuse God's munificent gifts to us; and God has heard her prayers, and permitted her to be a fellow-worker with Himself in bringing about these beneficent changes."





(The numbers refer to lines in the text)

CHAPTER I.

2. *Meadow* probably comes from a word which means "to mow," and is applied usually to a low, level piece of land which is mowed for hay.

3. *Shady trees*. We speak of shady trees and also of a shady seat under a tree. Is there any difference in the meaning of the adjective in the two expressions?

5. *Hedge* is a fence formed by bushes or small trees growing close together. In what country are hedges commonly used for this purpose? Study this chapter carefully and see if you can find out in what country the scene is laid.

9. *Plantation*. Suppose *grove* was used instead. Would you get a different meaning from it?

10. *Brook* is a small stream of water. What is gained in the sense by the addition of the adjective *running*?

29. *Whinnied*. Have you ever noticed that horses appear to have a means of communicating with one another?

33. *Cart-horse colts*. Do you think a beautiful carriage horse recognizes the difference between itself and a common horse?

37. *Newmarket*. A town in England where a famous race course is located.

75. *In a snap*. An expression used in England, but not in America. Study the sentence and see if you can make out its meaning.

CHAPTER II.

87. *Circumstance*, meaning an event or an occurrence, is made up of two Latin words which mean standing around. Do you see any connection between its original and its present meaning?

91. *I and the other colts*. Is this a common arrangement? If you should hear a person use it, what would you think of him?

93. *Distance* is from two Latin words which mean "to stand apart." What is its present meaning?

119. *Scent*. An odor from an animal, by means of which he may be tracked.

179. *Farrier* comes from a word meaning iron, and consequently means a worker in iron, or a blacksmith. It is in common use in England, but not in America.

190. *Rob Roy* was a famous Scottish outlaw who was made the subject of Scott's novel by the same name.

202. *But 'twas all for one little hare*. What do you think of this episode? Has it any moral?

The following description of a hare-hunt, from Shakspeare's *Venus and Adonis*, lines 679-708, is interesting in this connection:

"And when thou hast on foot the purblind hare,
Mark the poor wretch, to overshoot his troubles
How he outruns the winds, and with what care
He cranks and crosses with a thousand doubles:
The many musets¹ through which he goes
Are like a labyrinth to amaze his foes.

"Sometime he runs among a flock of sheep,
To make the cunning hounds mistake their smell,
And sometime where earth-delving conies keep,
To stop the loud pursuers in their yell,
And sometime sorteth with a herd of deer;
Danger deviseth shifts; wit waits on fear:

"For there his smell with others being mingled,
The hot scent-snuffing hounds are driven to doubt,

¹ A hole or gap in a hedge.

Ceasing their clamorous cry till they have singled
 With much ado the cold fault cleanly out;
 Then do they spend their mouths: Echo replies,
 As if another chase were in the skies.

"By this, poor wat, far off upon a hill,
 Stands on his hinder legs with listening ear,
 To hearken if his foes pursue him still:
 Anon their loud alarums he doth hear;
 And now his grief may be compared well
 To one sore sick that hears the passing-bell.

"Then shalt thou see the dew-bedabbled wretch
 Turn, and return, indenting with the way;
 Each envious briar his weary legs doth scratch,
 Each shadow makes him stop, each murmur stay:
 For misery is trodden on by many,
 And being low never relieved by any."

CHAPTER III.

226. *Collar*, from a Latin word meaning the neck.
Crupper. A strap of leather which passes under the horse's tail to prevent the saddle from slipping off.
Breeching. The part of the harness which passes around the breech of the horse and enables him to back the vehicle to which he is attached.

245. *Nasty*, in America, is the strongest word in use for that which is offensive to sight, smell, or touch, by reason of uncleanness or uncleanliness. In England the word is used in the sense of unpleasant or disagreeable.

306. *Railway* and *railroad* are practically synonymous words, but the former is in common use in England, while the latter is used in America.

309. *Pale* is from a Latin word which means a stake, and in this connection is the same as our word *picket*.

320. *Station*, from the Latin, means a standing place. Which is the better form to say, "a railroad station" or "a railroad depot"? What does depot mean?

CHAPTER IV.

361. *Rook*. A kind of crow which is common in Europe.

370. *Park* meant originally an enclosure, but here means a considerable extent of wood and pasture land surrounding a country house and used in part for recreation and in part for pasturage of horses and sheep.

374. *Lodge* is here a small house for the porter.

376. *Paddock*. A small turfed inclosure near a stable where horses are kept.

386. *Manger*. This word in French means "to eat." It is a trough or box in which food is placed for cattle or horses.

400. *Pony* is a very small horse.

401. *Pert* meant originally comely, neat, of good appearance, but has come to mean forward, saucy, impudent.

407. *Merrylegs*. Do you think boys and girls are ever like this little pony?

409. *Chair*. A two-wheeled carriage drawn by a single horse.

444. *Dare* means to be bold enough to undertake something.

463. *Groom*. Look this word up in the dictionary and see how its present meaning is derived from its original.

CHAPTER V.

470. *Stables*. This word comes from a Latin word which means "to stand."

479. *Pace* comes from a Latin word which means a step. How does it come to have the sense in which it is used here?

483. *Comfortably*. Look up this word and observe its meaning.

489. *Splendid* comes from a Latin word meaning "to shine."

525. *Ebony* is a name given to various kinds of wood distinguished for their dark color and hardness.

542. *Marengo* is a village in Italy where a great battle was fought between Napoleon and the Austrians, in which the former was victorious. *Pegasus* was a winged horse famous in Greek mythology. (See "The Chimera" in Hawthorne's *Wonder Book*.) *Abdallah* was the father of Mohammed. This name is sometimes given to horses, perhaps because it is an Arabian name and the Arabian horses are among the best in the world.

574. *Carriage*. Look up its meaning.

601. *Roan cob*. A strong, thick-set horse of a reddish color.

606. *Estate* and *state* come from the same Latin word. See if you can find out how the former comes to mean a piece of landed property.

612. *Chat*. There are four different nouns spelled in this way. Look them up in the dictionary and find out their meanings.

CHAPTER VI.

617. *Discontent*. This is an interesting word to study. It is made up of three Latin words—*dis*, apart from, or without; *con*, meaning together with; and *tent*, from a word meaning "to hold." See if you can trace its present meaning.

641. *Jump, dance, or prance*. Distinguish between these words.

651. *Skittish*. Easily frightened.

CHAPTER VII.

685. *Wean* comes from an Anglo-Saxon word meaning "to accustom." How is its present meaning derived?

722. *Pine* originally meant "to pain" or "to torture." It is now generally used in the sense of growing thin or wasting away with pain, sorrow, or longing.

739. *Horse-flesh*. What is the significance of this term?

777. *Flanks*. What part of the horse is indicated? In what other connection have you heard this word used?

788. *Sieve* comes from a word meaning "to sift."

810. *Filly*. A female colt.

811. *Vicious* is the adjective from *vice*, meaning a fault. Distinguish between this word and *vise*, meaning a clutching instrument, and as used in the term *vice-president*.

831. *Mettled*. Three hundred years ago *mettle* and *metal* both meant the same—the stuff of which one is made. Distinguish between their present meanings.

CHAPTER VIII.

847. *Bearing rein*. The rein by which a horse's head is held up while driving.

The following incident occurred at the funeral of the author of *Black Beauty*:

"When the hearse, which was to bear Anna to the grave, drew up at the door, Mrs. Sewell saw from the drawing-room window that the horses had bearing reins. Her much-loved friend and neighbor, Mrs. Buxton, was present, and caught her exclamation of distress. 'Oh, this will never do!' she said, and hastening downstairs, spoke to the men, and had the bearing reins removed from all the horses in the train."

—"Life and Letters of Anna Sewell," by Mrs. Bayley.

854. *Dreadful*. Meaning? Is it rightly used here?

876. *Irritable*. Easily excited.

881. *Surly* probably meant sourly, but it may have been derived from *sirly*, like a sir or lord. It means cross, ill-natured, morose.

899. *Tattersall's* is a sporting establishment and auction mart for horses in London. It was opened in 1770 by Richard Tattersall.

915. *Hocks*. The joint in the hind leg of a quadruped, corresponding to the ankle joint of a man.

920. *Aggravated*. This word is often used instead of *provoked*. Is it correctly used here?

935. *Defend*, by derivation, means "to ward off."

954. *Defiant*. What do you understand by this word?

960. *Birtwick balls*. Is this recipe good for anything besides the purpose for which it is used here?

962. *Physic* is used here in the sense of medicine.

979. *Gentleness* originally meant of noble birth. What is its present meaning? Which meaning of the word do you think is the better?

CHAPTER IX.

983. *Vicar* primarily is a person who is authorized to perform the functions of another. In the English church the vicar is the priest of a parish.

1010. *Offend* comes from a Latin word which means "to strike against." Can you trace its present meaning from this?

1022. *It is not them*. Is this a correct expression? Give reasons for your answer. Do you agree with him in his opinion of boys?

1029. *Agreeable*. How many synonyms can you give for this word? What is a synonym?

1052. *Gipsy* is derived from Egyptian. They call themselves Rom, and their language Rommany. Find out all you can about this interesting people. Consult George Borrow's works, *The Gypsies in Spain*, *The Bible in Spain*, *Lavengro*, and *Romany Rye*.

CHAPTER X.

1141. *Accident*. Look up this word and see what it means from its composition.

1151. *Indignity* comes from a word which means unworthy behavior, and may be defined as injury accompanied with insult.

1178. *Skye* is one of the inner Hebrides, near

Scotland, and is the home of a noted breed of terriers, called after the name of the island.

1212. *Distend*. Look up this word and see what it means by composition.

1214. *Blockheads*. Look up this word and find its original meaning.

1231. *Cooled us all down*. Explain this expression. Would you call it a figurative expression? If so, why?

1288. *Foal* is another name for colt.

CHAPTER XI.

1317. *Oppressed*. Study this word carefully.

1365. *Memory and intelligence*. Ascertain the meanings of these two words, and distinguish between them.

1404. *Bayonet*. What is this word derived from?

CHAPTER XII.

1439. *Toll-bar*. A beam or bar thrown across a road at a toll-house to prevent any one from passing without the payment of toll.

1525. *Chaise*. A few lines back the same carriage was called a dog-cart. Is there any difference between the two? If not, why are the different names given?

CHAPTER XIII.

1578. *Quickset*. Hawthorne planted for a hedge.

1616. *Roil*, sometimes called "rile," means originally to vex or disturb. It is usually applied to muddy water.

1668. What do you think about John's idea of religion as given in the last paragraph of this chapter?

CHAPTER XIV.

1688. *Industrious* comes from a Latin word which means diligent or active.

1723. *Droll* means odd or comical.

1735. *Pension* comes from a Latin word meaning a weight, and has come to mean a periodical payment made to a person retired from service on account of age or some other disability.

1756. *Postscript*. What is the meaning by derivation?

CHAPTER XV.

1794. *Harassed*. Used here in the sense of fatigued. *Drag* evidently means a brake. It is not ordinarily used in this sense in this country. Do you see how it got the meaning of a brake?

1805. *Principal*. Distinguish between this word and *principle*.

1809. *Ostler*. An English form of hostler.

1839. *Jockey*. It is interesting to notice that this word is a diminutive of the proper noun *Jack*. Can you see how it gets its present meaning?

1840. *Goodwood* is a place in Sussex, England, where a noted race course was established in 1802.

CHAPTER XVII.

2059. *Who they can trust*. Is this grammatically correct?

2100. *Work-house* originally meant simply a place where work was carried on, but now has come to mean, particularly in England, a place where able-bodied paupers are compelled to work.

2109. *Loft* means primarily the air, the sky. It is easy to see how it finally came to have the meaning of a garret.

2118. *A rainy or a sunny day*. Explain the meaning.

2136. *Heathenish*. This word has a very interesting history, which you should look up in the dictionary.

2160. *Mauled about*. Explain.

2175. *Pinch*. Is there a suspicion of slang in this expression?

2185. *Went quite off his appetite.* Is this a correct expression? Is its meaning clear and forcible? Is it an expression which would be commonly used in polite society? What are your conclusions?

CHAPTER XVIII.

2198. *Awoke.* Is this a correct expression?

CHAPTER XIX.

2347. *Draught.* A quantity of liquid prescribed to be taken at one time.

2379. *Only ignorance.* Isn't this too severe a denunciation? Under what circumstances may ignorance be called a sin?

2402. *A good deal cut up.* Explain this expression.

2409. *Strike* is sometimes used in the sense of taking root, and hence may be used here to mean to set out the young plants.

CHAPTER XX.

2452. *Impudent* is made up of two Latin words meaning not ashamed. Can you trace its present meaning from this?

2476. *Evidence* comes from two Latin words meaning "to see out," or "to see clearly." What does it mean now?

2477. *Magistrate* comes from the Latin word *magister*, which meant a master, and was often used for the master or pilot of a ship.

2490. A *summons* is a command to appear in court. It is made up of two Latin words meaning "to warn slightly" or "to give a hint."

2492. *Interfere.* Look up.

2493. What is the difference between *cruelty* and *oppression*?

2527. Distinguish between *purpose* and *determination*.

CHAPTER XXI.

2540. *Establishment*, which here means household, is derived from the same Latin word as *stable*. Do you see any similarity in their meaning?

2549. *Governess*. Look up.

2603. *Luggage* is used in England in the place of our word *baggage*.

2631. *Guard* is the name given in England to the official who has charge of a railway train.

CHAPTER XXII.

2649. *Stabling*. What part of speech is this word?

2679. *Suspicion* comes from two Latin words which mean "to look at" or "under." Can you see how it gets its present meaning?

2688. *Tit for tat* was originally *tip for tap*, or blow for blow.

2756. *Imperious* is from a word meaning "to command." Does this word convey a pleasant meaning to you? Why not?

CHAPTER XXIII.

2798. *Nonsense* is compounded of what two words?

2801. *Intolerable*. Look up this word.

2806. *Terret* is the loop or ring on the harness pad through which the reins pass.

2807. *Opportunity* comes from two words meaning before a harbor. Can you see any trace of its present meaning in this?

2813. *Desperate* comes from a word meaning without hope.

2820. *Winch*. An instrument with which to turn something forcibly.

2848. *Respectfully* comes from two words meaning "to look back upon." What does it mean now, and how is this meaning derived?

CHAPTER XXIV.

2929. *Auster*, in ancient mythology, was the south wind. Black Auster was undoubtedly named after the famous steed in "The Battle of Lake Regillus," in Macaulay's *Lays of Ancient Rome*, which see.

2932. *Thorough-bred* means of pure or unmixed breed.

2946. *Amiable* is derived from a Latin verb meaning "to love." The suffix *able* means capable of, hence this word means capable of being loved. How many words can you think of which have this ending? Give their meanings.

2997. *Frolicsome*. *Some*, used as a suffix, means full of. Do you think of any other words with this ending?

3012. *Eager* (sour, sharp) appears in the last two syllables of vinegar, which means sour wine. Can you trace its present meaning?

3029. *Road-mender*. Do we have such an official in this country?

3033. *Common* is a tract of land which is open to the public and may be used by them for pasturage or recreation.

3036. *Heather—furze-bushes—thorn tree*. In what kind of soil do these bushes grow? Do we find them in America? Are they useful?

3057. *Dyke*. A ditch. Is this the common spelling?

3071. *Habit*. A riding costume. *Habit* comes from the Latin verb which means "to have," or "to hold." It easily comes to mean a customary condition or mode of action. *Inhabit* (to dwell) also comes from this source. How is this meaning derived?

3137. *Random*. Consult dictionary.

3150. *Conversation* used to mean manner of life, and then familiar intercourse. It is now generally used to mean an informal interchange of thoughts

by spoken words. It is interesting to notice that many of our words have radically changed their meaning within the last few centuries, and that very few have retained their original meaning unchanged. Can you account for this in any way?

CHAPTER XXV.

3162. *Veterinary*. Consult the dictionary.

3164. *Tandem* is a Latin word which means at length. Its present meaning and use probably originated in a joke. Do you see the point of it?

3174. *Bout*. A turn or a loop. Hence a round of indulgence, or a drunken bout.

3191. *Intercede*. To go between.

3201. *Brougham*. A four-wheeled close carriage, named after the first Lord Brougham.

3243. *Turnpike*. A toll-gate. A road which was kept in repair by the tolls collected from those who used it was called a *turnpike*.

CHAPTER XXVI.

3299. *Distinguish*, from a Latin word meaning "to separate." What is its present meaning?

3320. *Odd*. What is the meaning in this connection? How does it differ from the original meaning?

3330. *Sense* comes from a Latin word meaning "to feel." Look up its different meanings and trace them from the original.

3373. *Caustic* is some substance which has the quality of burning anything with which it comes in contact. We sometimes say that a person has a caustic tongue. What do we mean? Is such a tongue a good possession?

3379. *Inquest* means a search into causes, here, of the accident.

3397. *Union House*. A union workhouse for paupers, erected and maintained at the joint expense of several parishes.

CHAPTER XXVII.

3421. *Steeplechase* is a horse-race across a tract of country in which ditches, hedges, and other obstacles must be jumped as they come in the way. A church steeple was sometimes chosen as the goal, hence the name.

3438. *Lime trees*. The lime is a fruit something like a lemon, but smaller.

3447. *Earthly*. Meaning of the word? Does it add anything to the meaning of the sentence?

3463. *Warrant*. In what sense is this word used?

3465. *Particular* comes from the same root as particle. What is its meaning here?

3488. *Tolerably* comes from a word meaning capable of being endured.

3503. *Themselves*. Explain the use and grammatical construction of the word.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

3506. *Experience* comes from a word meaning "to try out." What is its general meaning now?

3515. *Style* is a very interesting word. Consult the dictionary for its various meanings.

3526. *Insensible* means without feeling. What does *in* mean when joined to a word in this way?

3597. *Playing the old soldier*. What is the meaning of this expression? You will find after it in the dictionary the statement that it is colloquial. What does this mean?

3606. *Confound* comes from a Latin word which means "to pour together."

3621. *Into the bargain*. Is this a colloquial expression?

3625. *Contemptuous*. What is the difference in meaning between this word and contemptible?

CHAPTER XXIX.

Cockney (see title of chapter) is a word of doubtful meaning. It is here applied to a native or perma-

nent resident of London, and is used slightly, with allusion to peculiarities of pronunciation or narrowness of views.

3697. *Honest*. Is this word used in its ordinary signification here?

3701. *Twilight*. This word means half light.

3722. *Random*. A random shot is a shot which is not intentionally aimed at anything. Is the word properly applied to man? What does it evidently mean here?

3849. *Shindy*. What kind of a word is this?

CHAPTER XXX.

3889. *Bath* is located on the Avon, and is one of the most noted watering places in England.

3890. *Doctor* means literally a teacher. How many different kinds of doctors do you know?

3899. *Vetches*. A common plant used frequently for fodder. It is something like the wild pea.

3919. *Complain* means "to strike" or "to beat," as the breast, in pain or anger.

3981. *Blustered*. This word, when applied to the wind, means to blow fitfully or violently. Here it means to utter loud menaces or threats.

CHAPTER XXXI.

3986. *Immediate* is made up of two words which mean not separated.

3989. *Humbug* was originally slang, but is now in legitimate use. It means a sham.

4011. *Conceited*. Vain, egotistical.

4015. *Indolent* means, by derivation, free from pain. Can you give any synonyms?

4050. *Fumble-footed*. This expression does not appear in the Century dictionary. What does this fact indicate about its use in America? Could you give a good guess at its meaning?

4078. *Thrush*. An inflammatory disease of the feet.

4097. *Disgust* is a strong word. Consult the dictionary.

CHAPTER XXXII.

4123. *Dejected* means thrown or cast down.

4189. *Monstrous* is here used as an adverb, and means great or exceedingly.

4200. *Thoroughfare* comes from two words meaning a going through.

4208. *Governor*. What is its meaning? How is it used here?

4224. *Dismounted*. How does the prefix *dis* affect the meaning of the word?

4242. *Capital* comes from a word which means a head. What does it mean here?

CHAPTER XXXIII.

4265. *Crimean War*. A war waged between Russia and the allied forces of Turkey, France, England, and Sardinia, in 1853-56. One of the best-known events of this war was the famous charge of the Six Hundred, which is so beautifully commemorated in Tennyson's poem entitled "The Charge of the Light Brigade."

4266. *Cavalry* comes from a word meaning a horseman. Chivalry comes from the same word.

4267. *Regiment* comes from the Latin *rego*, which means "to rule." It now means a body of soldiers under the command of an officer. How many men compose a regiment in the United States army?

4304. *Palisades*. Pickets. Why are the Palisades on the Hudson so called?

4339. *Dispute* means originally "to make clean," "to clear up." How does it get its present meaning?

CHAPTER XXXIV.

4474. *Caparisoned*. A caparison is a cloth or a covering for a saddle.

4485. *Animated* is from a word which means life; hence, full of life.

4488. *Restive*, which comes from the same word as *rest*, has come in some way to have the opposite meaning, or *restless*.

4501. *Crest* means the comb or the tuft on the head of a bird or serpent; hence it comes to mean the top of the head or of a hill.

4517. *Terrified*. What is the difference between this word and *afraid*?

4525. *Stagger* means "to reel" as a drunken man.

4531. *Whiz* is a word formed in imitation of the sound which it names. Do you think of any other words formed in this way? Can you find out what this method of forming words is called?

4579. How does *engagement* come to mean a battle?

4587. *Enemy* is compounded of the word *in* and a word which means a friend. How does it get its meaning of hostility? *Parade*. The senses dress, adorn, set in order, and halt for inspection are all included in the present meaning of this word.

4596. *Awfully*. Is this use of the word correct? In what sense may it be rightly used? *Wicked*. Look up its meaning.

CHAPTER XXXV.

4629. *Loiter* means "to linger," "to trifle." It is akin to a word which means a worthless fellow.

4648. *Conscience*. Look up.

4654. *Determinately*. Does this word differ from *determinedly*? If so, in what way?

4660. *Portmanteau*. A case used in journeying to contain clothing. It comes from a French verb meaning "to carry," and a noun meaning a cloak.

4661. *Pavement* comes from a word meaning "to beat" or "ram down." Can you see how it comes to have its present meaning?

4664. *Stun* means originally "to make a din."

4671. *Important* comes from the Latin and means originally "to bring in."

4695. *Om nibuses, carts, etc.* Distinguish between these different vehicles.

4735. *Cheapside* is a great thoroughfare in London, which was formerly a large open common, where markets and public assemblies were held.

4757. *Half-crown.* A coin worth a little more than sixty cents.

4762. *Dover line.* What foreign city is commonly reached by way of Dover?

4819. *Good Luck.* The figure of speech used here is called personification. Look up its definition and give other examples of its use. Is it used much in common conversation?

CHAPTER XXXVI.

4836. *License.* It is necessary to take out a license for every public carriage. Formerly the charge for a seven days' license was greater than for one which was to be used only on week days, but now only one license is issued, and that covers every day in the week.

4856. *I should have thought you would not have.* Reconstruct this sentence to make it correct, and indicate its error.

4861. *Customer* meant originally a toll-gatherer. From which it comes to mean a purchaser, and then a patron.

4904. *Sovereign* is a gold coin worth one pound, or \$4.86.

4952. *Religious.* What does this word mean? Do you think you can tell a religious man by his outward life? How?

4975. *Applaud* means "to strike together," as the hands.

4980. *Foundling.* The suffix *ling* is a diminutive, therefore limits the meaning to something small, hence an infant.

4997. *Mackintosh*, so named from Charles Mackintosh, the inventor.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

5010. *Employed*. Look up.

5052. *Where it pinches*. Explain the meaning. From what is the figure derived?

5059. *Pulling a beast or donkey out of a pit*. What is the allusion?

5069. *Wonderful*. Is this word properly used here?

5078. *Preparations*. Compounded of two Latin words, meaning "to make ready beforehand."

5082. *Gig*. A light two-wheeled carriage. This word has an interesting derivation, and should be looked up in the dictionary. It probably meant at first a fiddle.

5096. *Offend* meant originally "to strike against," but as used here means to displease or annoy. Do you think it can be properly used in connection with animals?

5114. *Sheer spirits*. Sheer means pure, clear, bright, but it is also used in the sense of utter, downright; e. g., sheer nonsense.

5118. *Little brown book*. Can you guess what book this was?

5128. *The birds were singing hymns*, etc. Explain.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

5139. *Rug*. A thick, heavy covering, ordinarily of wool.

5151. *Party*. Is this use of the word correct, or is it slang?

5163. *Tavern* comes from the same root as table and tabernacle, and is used in England to designate a place where wines and other liquors, as well as food, are furnished to guests.

5170. *Rank* probably refers to the stand; that is, to the place where the carriages assembled to wait for customers. *Tins*. A name given in England

to pots, cans, and other utensils made of tin. What figure of speech is it?

5193. *Gentleman*. What is your definition of this word? Do you think any one has a different one?

5204. *Has got*. Is this a correct expression? If not, how would you say it?

5243. *Furious* is a strong word, and means full of madness or rage. Would a wise and good man allow himself to fall into such a state of mind?

5244. *Brutal* means something which resembles the lower animals, hence savage. Do you think an animal would be guilty of such actions, or does man sometimes fall lower than the animals?

5252. *Abusive* comes from a word meaning "to use up." It has come to mean injurious, insulting.

5273. *Oppressed*. Look up in the dictionary.

5283. *Doctrine* means that which is taught, but here he means his principles. What do you think about this doctrine? Isn't it a good principle for boys and girls to act upon in their school life?

CHAPTER XXXIX.

5296. *Provide* comes from a word which means to see forward.

5302. *Jade* as a noun means any old or worn-out horse. As a verb it means, of course, to reduce to this condition.

5311. *Desperate* means to be without hope.

5318. *Penny—shilling*. Find the value of each in American money.

5365. *There's wrong lays*, etc. Rewrite this sentence so that it shall be grammatically correct and complete.

5376. *Uncommon*. A vulgar use of an adjective as an adverb.

CHAPTER XL.

5484. *Knacker*. "There is a regular occupation in London and other large cities of men known as

the Knackers. It consists in buying old and worn-out horses, as well as buying and removing dead ones. If there is any work left in the former, it is utilized till the last. Then the animal is killed. The flesh is generally converted into food for cats and dogs, in the sale of which there is a large trade and a considerable number of persons employed. To say that a horse is only fit for the Knackers' yard is to say that it ought to be dead."—*Century Dictionary*.

CHAPTER XLI.

5505. *Prevented*. Look up in the dictionary and find out the original meaning.

5546. *Dismiss*. *Dis* is called privative. That is, it involves the idea of separation when used as a prefix, as in this case. *Miss* comes from a Latin word meaning "to send." *Disgrace*, in the same line, is constructed in the same way. If *grace* means favor, what does the entire word mean? Do you think of any other words containing this prefix?

5547. *Condition*. The prefix *con* means together, and the rest of the word comes from the Latin word *dicare*, which means "to speak." What would be the primary meaning of the whole word?

5548. *Liabie* means lying open to obligation. Is the word properly used here? Can you suggest a better word?

5568. *Gentry*. In England this word is applied to the class of people of means and leisure below the rank of the nobility.

5589. *Coster-boy*. A boy who sells fruits and vegetables in the streets. *Costard*, from which this word is derived, means an apple. It comes from a Latin word meaning a rib. Hence the word meant at first a ribbed apple. *Costermonger* comes from the same word.

5599. *Prince Charlie* was surnamed "The Young Pretender." His history is romantic and interesting, and should be looked up in a history of England.

CHAPTER XLII.

5619. *For the election.* That is, to bring voters to the polling-place. Elections in England were often disorderly, even riotous, and frequently ended in mob violence. Can you see in this any reason for Jerry's refusal? Did he refuse for his own sake or that of his horse?

5629. *Politics.* What is the meaning of this statement? Would Americans use a different term?

5648. *Blue ragamuffin—orange blackguards.* Is there any explanation of these expressions in what follows?

CHAPTER XLIII.

5687. *Carpet-bag.* A traveling-bag made of carpeting.

5688. *Bishopsgate* was the principal entrance through the north wall of old London.

5690. *Regent's Park* is one of the largest parks in London.

5726. *Bewildered.* Confused as to situation or direction.

5773. *Important* has the same derivation as our word *import*, meaning "to bring in." Can you see how it gets its meaning of momentous, or of much consequence?

CHAPTER XLIV.

5851. *London Bridge* is the first and most famous of the London bridges. It is situated at the head of navigation, and about half a mile above the Tower. The first structure of which there is any record was destroyed November 16, 1091, by a storm and high tide. The first stone bridge was completed in 1209, and was nearly a thousand feet long. Houses were built upon it, and eventually it became a continuous street. The present bridge was completed in 1832.

5853. *The Monument* is a column near the bridge erected to commemorate the great fire. It was designed by Sir Christopher Wren, who was one of the

most famous of English architects. His greatest work was St. Paul's Cathedral.

5866. *Miracle*. Find the exact meaning and see if the word is correctly used here.

5888. *Lunatic* comes from a word meaning the moon, hence moon-struck or mad. What do you think of Jerry's reasoning?

5894. *Compensation* means a counterbalance or a reward which makes up for a loss. In such cases do you think the innocent always suffer? Is it possible to make compensation for such suffering?

5933. *Repent*. What is the full meaning of this word?

5945. *Canker* and *cancer* come from the same word and mean any corroding agency which causes decay or ulceration.

5982. *Hotspur* was a name given to Sir Henry Percy, a dashing nobleman who entered into a rebellion against Henry IV. and was defeated and killed at the battle of Shrewsbury. Shakspeare introduces him in the first part of "Henry IV." as a gay, jesting, and fiery-tempered soldier.

5993. *Sensible* meant, originally, having feeling, but is generally used now in the sense of reasonable.

6003. *Disgusted—degraded*. Notice the difference between the prefixes and see how they affect the meaning of the words to which they are attached. The word *grade* which appears in the second word means a step. What other meaning does it sometimes have?

CHAPTER XLV.

6012. *Holiday* was originally a consecrated day, or a day set apart for commemorating some important event or in honor of some person. It was a day of exemption from labor, hence of recreation and amusement.

6014. *Amusement* meant first absorbing thought, which is quite different from its present meaning. It

came to mean to fix the attention agreeably, and then to divert or entertain. In this way its present meaning has been reached.

6141. *Agreeable*. Is this word used here in its ordinary sense?

6146. *Good club*. An organization whose object was to care for its members when they were sick, or for their families when they died.

6147. *Eating their heads off*. What is the meaning of this somewhat startling expression? This is sometimes called in general terms a figure of speech. Do you know what that means? Can you find out what figure this is?

CHAPTER XLVI.

6244. *Premises*. Look up this word and see how it comes to have its present meaning.

6296. *Persuasively*. What does this word indicate in regard to her attitude toward Jakes?

6374. *Purblind* probably means nearly blind, or dim-sighted.

CHAPTER XLVII.

6404. *Nitre* is the same as *saltpetre*. It is to be suspected that Black Beauty meant nothing more than common salt.

6472. *Exhaustion*. The verb from which this word comes means "to draw out," or "to empty." Hence the noun means the state of being emptied of strength.

6474. *Goaded*. Driven with a sharp stick or goad.

6482. *Confusion* means a mingling or pouring together.

6493. *Cordial* means of or pertaining to the heart. In medicine it means anything that increases the action of the heart.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

6611. *Gratefuller*. Is this the correct form for the comparative of *grateful*? Notice that *pleasanter*,

formed in the same way, is correct. How do you explain this?

6632. *Speculation* means here the investing of money for profit on an uncertainty. The verb means to take a view, as from a watchtower. Do you see any connection between the two meanings?

6648. *Benefactor* means a well-doer. Here it means the one who confers a great favor upon another.

CHAPTER XLIX.

6696. *Tarbrush*. Tar is a specific for certain diseases of the hoof.

6730. *Incline* is used in the sense of "to be disposed."





- Robert Browning's "How They Brought the Good News from Ghent to Aix."
- Rudyard Kipling's "East and West."
- Mrs. Browning's "Rhyme of the Duchess May."
- William Cowper's "History of John Gilpin."
- Frank H. Gassaway's "Bay Billie," in "Advance." New York: E. S. Werner Publishing Company.
- Henry W. Longfellow's "Paul Revere's Ride."
- Thomas Buchanan Read's "Sheridan's Ride."
- Ph. Charles Berjeau's "The Horses of Antiquity, Middle Ages and Renaissance." 60 plates. London, 1864.
- Captain Thomas Brown, "Biographical Sketches and Authentic Anecdotes of Horses." Edinburgh, 1830.
- Major-General W. Tweedie, C. S. I., "The Arabian Horse; His Country and People." Blackwood, 1894.
- E. Daumas—*Translator*, James Hunter—"The Horses of the Sahara and the Manners of the Desert." London, 1863.
- There are several delightful horse stories in Colonel George E. Waring's "Whip and Spur." New York: Doubleday and McClure, 1897.
- There is a delightful pony in Mrs. J. Horatia Ewing's "Jackanapes" (Boston: Little, Brown & Co.), and a noble cab horse, Big Diamond, in MacDonald's "At the Back of the North Wind" (London: George Routledge).



A WORD ABOUT THE BOOK

IF Black Beauty had been born a man instead of a horse he would have been a well-bred, intelligent, and respected Christian gentleman; but as it was, with all his graces of character and beauties of person, he was nothing but a slave, subject to any treatment to which his temporary owner chose to subject him. It is true that sometimes he had kind and thoughtful masters, but there are not many Squire Gordons and Jerrys even now, and there were fewer at the time when our friend gave his pathetic story to the world.

This narrative, which purports to be told by the hero himself, is one of the most beautiful of its kind in the English language, and has done much to change the estimation in which horses have been held, and to relieve the cruelty, often thoughtless, to which they have been subjected. It suggested the formation of Humane Societies and has thus exerted a powerful influence throughout the civilized world. Before its publication little attention was paid to the sufferings of our dumb and patient servants, but since that time influential organizations whose sole object is to prevent the abuse of the lower animals have come into existence in nearly every city, in all the states of our own country, and in other lands.

The hero of the tale is a horse, with all the personal beauties and graces of air and motion which characterize this most perfect form of the brute creation. He is high-spirited and sprightly in disposition, yet he honestly tries to discharge the most

wearisome and irksome duties for his master, even though he sometimes receives in return only the harshest treatment. He is grateful for every kindness and never cherishes resentment for injuries done him. Although he has never been told to govern his actions by the Golden Rule, he lives up to its requirements a great deal better than many of his masters.

He tells his story with a sincerity and naïve modesty which excite our sympathetic interest in every word he has to say, and despite its simplicity and homeliness it is strangely attractive. It comes to us as a voice from another world, and yet it is told in such a matter of fact way that we can hardly persuade ourselves that it is fiction and not fact. After all, may it not be fact? Are we not convinced after reading it that it is true in every essential detail? There is certainly nothing in it that is improbable or that we have not ourselves either seen or heard.

Who can deny that the horses in our streets have a language of their own; that they appreciate the humiliation as well as the pain of the blows under which they cringe; that they suffer in a very human way from the check-rein, clipped tails, and heavy loads; nay, that even the unkind word brings them pain just as it does to us, their human, if not always humane, comrades? On the other hand we have all seen how the beautiful creatures delight in a kind word or a caress. We have seen them prick up their ears and neigh softly when we approach them in a kindly way, and have observed the affection which they manifest toward a gentle master.

How often do these patient animals, as they travel their weary roads through our midst, giving us all of their best, lift their pleading eyes to our faces, mutely begging for a word of sympathy or a kindly stroke, and beg in vain, as we go our ways without a thought of our indebtedness to them! Shall not this simple story open our eyes to many

things which hitherto we have not seen, and lead us to a kindlier interest in the sad and weary lives of these patient toilers who do so much for us and ask for so little in return?

As we read these pages it must dawn upon us that there are many phases of animal life of which we have never dreamed. Many of us have never realized that each horse has a distinct personality of his own; that to a large extent his character is as clearly marked as that of any of our own companions. One horse will be gay, alert, and full of life, while another will be sober, dignified, and eminently respectable. There is the mischievous pony who delights in playing pranks, with twinkling eyes and restless legs, brimming over with good-natured, coltish fun, like our friend Merrylegs. Then there is the sensitive and ill-tempered animal, who bites and kicks at every opportunity, and shows in all possible ways his resentment against the human race. Such was Ginger before she came under John Manly's kindly influence. Again there is the well-bred, high-mannered, old-fashioned gentleman, such as Captain, who, although he had fallen from a high estate, dragged around his dingy old cab with the same air of distinction with which he led the van of a charging squadron on the battlefield. Surely we may learn a lesson of patience and fortitude in the midst of reverses from our old war horse.

There are hundreds of other types of horses, but perhaps the best of all is that which we find in the gentle horse who gives his name to this story. Here is true equine gentility and breeding. Conscious of his own beauty and strength, he regards them merely as instruments for increasing his usefulness in his master's service. For the kind word and caress he is grateful, but harsh treatment never excites his resentment. Under all circumstances he does his best. If he has a heavy load to draw, he pulls with

all his might. When he carries a lady on his back he gallops smoothly and fleetly along, and is constantly on his guard to see that she comes to no harm through him. When harnessed with his mate to a carriage he does his full share of the work and never waits for the lash to urge him forward. With all this he is affectionate, gentle, merry, helpful, and altogether a most lovable creature.

It is true that Black Beauty is an imaginary horse, and some may say that he never had a real existence anywhere. But before coming finally to this conclusion, let us study and converse with the horses around us. Of course we cannot talk with horses as Black Beauty talked with his friends, but in another way we can. If we let them understand our kindly intentions, we can soon learn much of their thoughts and feelings. The true way to communicate with any animal is to put ourselves into a sympathetic attitude toward him, and if we do this persistently we cannot fail to gain his confidence and to establish communication. If we make this effort, we are sure to find that there are Black Beauties all around us.

Few of us have stopped to think how much we owe to the horse, and it will surprise many to be told that the advance of civilization has to a considerable extent depended upon him. Previous to the introduction of steam locomotion he furnished the only effective means of overland transportation, with the exception of the camel, which is adapted only to tropical countries. If he had refused his services, the population of the world would have been grouped along the borders of the oceans or on navigable rivers. The great agricultural and manufacturing centers could never have reached their present importance and the advancement of civilization would have had to wait for some tardy substitute.

There is an old legend that Poseidon, the god of

the sea, offered the people of Athens the gift of the horse if they would name the city for him, but Athena, the goddess of wisdom, offered them the olive tree, and they chose her gift as the most useful which could be conferred upon mortals.¹ We cannot overestimate the value of these gifts, but when the allwise Creator gave the horse to the world He conferred one of the greatest of his material favors.

There can be little doubt that the horse is the most useful of all the lower animals and the one which has conferred on man the greatest benefits. Other animals are more powerful, but there is none whose strength is more submissive to the will of man and so easily directed. There are others speedier, but the swiftness of the horse is more readily controlled and utilized. Perhaps the horse is not the most intelligent of animals, yet his intelligence becomes the best adapted to the uses to which he is to be put, when he is found to be docile and susceptible of the necessary training. In any one quality he may be excelled by others, but in the combination of all those qualities which unite to fit him for the service and delight of man he has no peer.

The Arabian belief in regard to the origin of the horse is as follows:

"When Allah willed to create the horse, he said to the south wind: 'I will that a creature should proceed from thee—condense thyself!' and the wind condensed itself. Then came the angel Gabriel, and he took a handful of the matter and presented it to Allah, who formed it into a dark bay horse, saying: 'I have called thee horse. I have created thee Arab, and I have bestowed upon thee the color bay. I have attached good fortune to the hair that falls between thy eyes. Thou shalt be lord of all other animals. Man shall follow thee wheresoever thou

¹See Gayley's *Classic Myths*, p. 109, or Bulfinch's *Age of Fable*, revised edition, p. 132.

goest. Good for pursuit as for flight, thou shalt fly without wings. Upon thy back shall riches repose, and through thy means shall wealth come.'

"Then he signed him with the sign of glory and of good fortune, a star in the middle of the forehead."

It is reported, too, that Mohammed turned the instinctive Arabian love of horses into a religious duty, by going forth from his tent to receive a gift of five beautiful mares, severally belonging to the five races of Arabia, and saying as he caressed them with his hand, "Blessed be ye, O daughters of the Wind."

To the world of business and trade the horse has given his strength, and to the world of literature and art he has contributed his grace and beauty. Throughout all the ages he has been the generally accepted type of the union of power and grace and the pride of conscious merit. His attributes have been pictured in prose and verse and heralded abroad in every literature. In one of the oldest poems in existence (Job xxxix., 19-25) we read:

"Hast thou given the horse strength? Hast thou clothed his neck with thunder? The glory of his nostrils is terrible. He paweth in the valley and rejoiceth in his strength. He goeth on to meet the armed man. He mocketh at fear and is not affrighted; neither turneth he back from the sword. The quiver rattleth against him, the glittering spear and shield. He swalloweth the ground with fierceness and rage, neither believeth he that it is the sound of the trumpet. He saith among the trumpets, Ha! ha! and he smelleth the battle afar off, the thunder of the captains and the shouting."

Nor has the horse been less prominent in art. In the heroic statue and the pastoral painting alike he has been the embodiment of warlike pride and triumph on the one hand and of peaceful industry on the other. So intimately does he enter into all the

concerns of human life that he must appear in nearly every scene of activity as an important feature. This fact has been recognized by artists and sculptors and they have used him freely in their greatest works. Let us hope that the just and honorable treatment which has been shown him in literature and art may soon become his heritage in real life, and when that time comes it may truly be said that the author of *Black Beauty*, the span of whose life was filled with suffering patiently borne, has been the Lincoln who emancipated the horse from a cruel and inhuman bondage.

SPECIAL SUGGESTIONS

Black Beauty, like *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, is a book with a mission, and the chief thing for the teacher to do is to give it an opportunity to work out that mission in the hearts of the children.

Unlike many books that are prepared for children, it leads them into familiar scenes and introduces them to characters which, if not well known, at least are not strange, while an unusual element of interest is added by the novelty of the view point.

The charm of the book is so great that any pupil who once begins it will hardly be able to leave it until he has finished. It is therefore better to have it read alone at home than aloud in school, after which it can be studied in detail in the class.

Whatever methods are undertaken, the chief stress must always be laid on its ethical content, and its lessons of kindly sympathy must be carefully defined and applied to the daily life of the child, so that they may have their due influence in the formation of his character. When this has been done the true mission of the book has been fulfilled, and its legitimate study may be considered complete. It offers, however, an unusual opportunity for elementary studies in philology, which are entirely within the range of pupils

of this grade, and which may be pursued with more or less profit.

Although its style is simple and colloquial, its author uses an unusually large percentage of words of Latin origin. Through these words and with a free use of the dictionary the pupil may receive his first lessons in word formation and the development of current meanings from original elements. The notes have emphasized this line of study perhaps sufficiently for ordinary classes, but much more material may be found in the text.

British colloquialisms abound throughout the book, to which attention should be constantly directed and the American equivalents ascertained. It may be found profitable to discuss the different forms of expression and to decide which is in accordance with the best usage. In order to do this successfully the class must be taught, in a simple way, what constitutes good usage and how the standard of English expression is determined.

A number of suggestive questions, together with a few subjects for compositions and discussions, are given, which will help to develop and crystallize the lessons of the book.

For information in regard to the life of the author the following books may be consulted:

Mrs. Bayley's *Life and Letters of Mrs. Sewell*. London: Nisbet, 1889.

Mary Sewell in the *Dictionary of National Biography*.

Allibone's *Dictionary of Authors*, II., 2001, and Supplement, II., 1332.

SUGGESTIVE QUESTIONS

1. In Chapter V. is this statement: "Of course I did not understand all he said, but I learned more and more to know what he meant and what he wanted me to do." How could Black Beauty under-

stand what John meant when he could not understand what he said? Is it possible to communicate thought without expressing it in language?

2. The title of Chapter VI. is "Liberty." What do you understand by this word? What did Black Beauty understand by it? Would he have been better off if he had had liberty all his life? Would his master? Is liberty a good thing? Is there ever a time when it is not a good thing?

3. Compare the breaking in of Ginger, as described in Chapter VII., with that of Black Beauty. Which was the better way for the owner? Which was the more humane?

4. Comment on the statement, "A bad-tempered man will never make a good-tempered horse." May this statement be given a wider application?

5. Is there any reasonable excuse for the bearing or check rein?

6. What do you think of Merrylegs' estimate of boys in Chapter IX.? What do you think of Merrylegs himself?

7. Give some reasons why a horse's tail should not be cut. Are there any good reasons for doing it?

8. "To my mind, fashion is one of the wickedest things in the world, said Sir Oliver." Comment on this statement.

9. Distinguish between reason and instinct. Give instances of the latter which have come within your own knowledge.

10. In Chapter XIII. occurs this statement: "Cruelty is the devil's own trademark." Comment on it.

11. Did Joe do right to interfere when he saw a teamster whipping his horses? See Chapter XXI. Had not the man a right to whip his own animals?

12. What caused the change in Joe noted in the last paragraph of Chapter XX.?

13. "I shall speak to my agent in London, and

leave your character with him." Explain "character." Is it used in this way in America?

14. What do you think about Jerry's practice in regard to extra fares as illustrated in Chapter XXXV.?

15. Sketch briefly the characteristics of each one of Black Beauty's different owners. Which one do you think he liked best?

16. Which one of all the horses named in this book do you like best, leaving out Black Beauty? Why?

SUBJECTS FOR COMPOSITIONS AND DISCUSSIONS

1. Tell the story of Black Beauty's life in your own words.

2. Imagine yourself to be Ginger and give an account of your first meeting with Black Beauty, and your impressions of him.

3. Describe the different accidents related in the book, and give their final causes.

4. Is this story overdrawn, or do horses have substantially the same experiences nowadays? Discuss.

5. Humane societies and their work.

6. Relate some incident showing the intelligence of the horse, which has come within your own experience.

7. The evils of fashion, as viewed by a horse.

8. The evils of drunkenness, as viewed by a horse.

9. The lessons of this book.

10. Which is the more intelligent, the horse or the dog? Discuss.

11. Horses in Homer.

12. The Horse of the Cid.

13. The Horse of Odin.

14. The Horse of Sigurd.

15. Pegasus.

OTHER VOLUMES READY IN

The Canterbury Classics

A New Series of Supplementary Readers for All Grades

Edited under the general supervision of

KATHARINE LEE BATES

Professor of English Literature in Wellesley College

RAB AND HIS FRIENDS, AND OTHER DOG STORIES, by Dr. John Brown. Edited by Charles W. French, *Principal of the Hyde Park High School, Chicago*. Illustrated with a portrait of Doctor Brown, 6 full-page and 16 text drawings by Angus McDonall, and 5 reproductions of original sketches by the author. Cloth, 152 pages. 25 cents.
Rab and his Friends (alone), paper 10 cents

THE GOLD BUG, by Edgar Allan Poe. Edited by Theda Gildemeister. *Training Teacher in the State Normal School, Winona, Minn.* Illustrated with the Zolnay bust of Poe as frontispiece, a map of Sullivan's Island, and 6 full-page drawings by G. C. Widney. Cloth, 112 pages. 25 cents. The same, paper 15 cents.

THE CRICKET ON THE HEARTH, by Charles Dickens. Edited by George B. Aiton, *State Inspector of High Schools for Minnesota*. Illustrated with a frontispiece portrait of Dickens, and 7 full-page drawings by G. C. Widney. Cloth, 176 pages 30 cents.

THE KING OF THE GOLDEN RIVER, by John Ruskin. Edited by Katharine Lee Bates, *Professor of English Literature in Wellesley College*. Illustrated with a frontispiece portrait of Ruskin, and 8 full-page drawings in the text, by John C. Johanson. Cloth, 82 pages. 25 cents.

THE STORY OF A SHORT LIFE, by Juliana H. Ewing. Edited by Sarah C. Brooks, *Supervisor of Primary Schools, St. Paul, Minn.* Illustrated with a frontispiece portrait of Mrs. Ewing, by Durand and Reid, and 12 full-page drawings by Ruth Mary Hallock. Cloth, 164 pages 30 cents.

ALICE'S ADVENTURES IN WONDERLAND, by Lewis Carroll. Edited by Florence Milner, of the *Detroit University School, Detroit, Mich.* With a frontispiece portrait of Carroll, 50 illustrations by Fanny Y. Cory, and 16 illustrations by the authors. Cloth, 192 pages. 30 cents

TREASURE ISLAND, by Robert Louis Stevenson. Edited by Theda Gildemeister, *Training Teacher in the State Normal School, Winona, Minn.* With Arthur Smith's portrait of Stevenson, a map, and 14 full-page illustrations by G. C. Widney. Cloth, 328 pages 40 cents.

RAND, McNALLY & COMPANY

Chicago

New York

London

